







I know of no other copy of this, & extremely rare 2d.

Note by Heber

(9 lines) July 1852. c. 6m.  $\frac{7.7.0}{2.0.6}$   
Bought at the sale of  $\frac{9.7.6}{}$

James Westley 1773

President of the Royal Society  
by proxy for 1.12.0

OLYVER  
OF CASTYLL  
AND THE  
FAYRE  
HELAINE

1518  
IN PRYNTED  
BY W. DE WORDE

fl. mor. with joints ~~bound on bands~~

was in original

The Heber shelf mark

Type. July 11. 225



10

10

10

10

10

10

10

10

1018

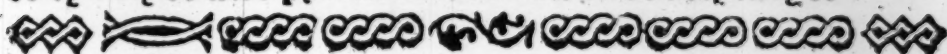




The prologue vpon the hystoꝛye of Olyuer of  
Castylle.



By cause that the memoꝛye is the receyvinge  
& nature humayne for his fragyltye is stron-  
gely mouable / goodly hath ben introducte  
that the reasons concludynge intendably &  
saynges / and also auctorytes of sayntes and  
dyscrete men / semblably hystoꝛyes and examples woꝝ-  
thy of commemozacyon ben reduced by wytyng / for  
to shewe to them that ben to come that whiche hath be-  
sayd and done before to the instruccyon and saluacyon  
of the soule of euery good crysten man. ¶ Now it is thus  
that is this present tyme the scripctures by the arte and  
ingenyous practyke of Pryntynge be multiplyed in su-  
che a wyse that dyuers fayre and comodous ensygnyn-  
ges / and ensamples ben had / of whiche fewe folkes had  
the bookes and congnysaunce / & now they ben put forth  
and vttered for so lytell a pryse that it can not be lyghtely  
lesse / neuerthelesse by cause of the vnderstādyng com-  
mune / that is better contente for to receyue the hystoꝛyes /  
and examples than other thyng / dyuers hystoꝛyes ben  
put in wytyng. And amonge y other hystoꝛyes is one  
founde of longe tyme wyten / the whiche is named the  
hystoꝛye of Olyuer of Castylle / and Arthure of Algarbe  
his loiall felowe / the whiche for theyꝝ vertues / and to lo-  
ue better honoure than to consente to currell / had grete ad-  
uersytees / and metuaylous fortunes and aduentures /  
the whiche by grete loyalte and ardaunt charyte / and al-  
so fydeltye and promesse / toke an ende so lytarye.



Oly.

Pa. ii.

**Here begynneth the table of this present boke**

**Tabula.**

- The fyrste chapytre speketh of y natyuyte of Olyuer of Castylle / and of the dethe of his moder. Capitulo. i.**
- How Olyuer was bozne to be baptyfed / and the body of his mod bozne to be buryed. And how Embassodours were comysed for to mary y kyng agayne. Ca. ii.**
- How the maryage was treated betwene the quene of Algarbe Arthurs moder / and y kyng of Castylle Olyuers fader. Capitulo. iij.**
- How y kyng of Castylle wedded y quene of Algarbe / and ledde her in to Castylle with her sone Arthur y resembled Olyuer. Capitulo. iiij.**
- How Olyuer and Arthur were put to lernynge / and of the Justes that were made by them. Capitulo. v.**
- How the quene of Castylle began for to loue Olyuer dysshonestlye. Capitulo. vi.**
- How the quene gaue Olyuer for to vnderstande that she loued hym carnally / and of the couerte answers of Olyuer to honoure. Capitulo. viij.**
- How Olyuer departed all trouble of the requestes of his stepmoder / and how he prayed god for to reuoke her from her carnall desyre. Capitulo. viij.**
- How the quene yet agayne declared her courage to Olyuer / desyringe hym to fulfyll her carnall desyre / & of Olyuers sayre denyenge. Capitulo. ix.**
- How Olyuer refused vtterly y quene his stepmoder of all her dysshonest loue. And how she menaced hym to the dethe. Capitulo. x.**
- How Olyuer abode all alone in his chambze where as he made dyuers complayntes / and of the lettre that he**



f Olyuer  
 pitulo. i.  
 the body  
 modours  
 ii.  
 quene of  
 plie Oly  
 iii.  
 f Algar.  
 Arthur f  
 iiij.  
 ge / and  
 v.  
 Olyuer  
 vi.  
 de that  
 wers of  
 viij.  
 questes  
 reuoke  
 viij.  
 age to  
 pyre / x  
 ix.  
 moder  
 ym to  
 x.  
 ere as  
 hat he

wrote to his felowe / and wherat he sholde knowe yf that  
 he had ony thynge but good. Capitulo. xi.

How Olyuer departed all alone without ouy compa  
 ny / and came to a hauen of the see where as he founde a  
 shyp in the whiche he entred with a knyght that he foun  
 de there of Englande. Capitulo. xij.

How Arthur of Algarbe came in to y chambze of his  
 broder Olyuer / that made grete dole for his departyng.  
 Capitulo. xiiij.

How the kynge of Castylle came in to Oliuers chamz  
 bze / and of the grete dole that he demeaned whā he fou  
 de hym not. Capitulo. xiiij.

How the kynge sente after his sone / and of his lamen  
 tacyons / and of them y the quene made whan she sawe  
 that all doloure was comen by her cause. Ca. xv.

Of the grete fortune that happened to Olyuer vpon  
 the see / and how he and the Englysshe knyght were pre  
 serued from brownyng. Capitulo. xvi.

How the knyght Olyuers felowe deyd. xvij.

How Olyuer dyde burye the knyght / and of the Jus  
 tes that were publyshed in Englande / and he that shol  
 de do best sholde haue y kynges doughter to wyfe. xvij.

How Olyuer was assayled of theues / the whiche he  
 slewe / and of y whiche happened to hym vpon the waye  
 towarde London. Capitulo. xix.

How a knyghte came and recomforted Olyuer / and  
 of the promesses that they had togyder. Capitulo. xx.

How Olyuer came in to y hermytage. Capitulo. xxi.

How Olyuer sawe dyuers knyghtes and other folke /  
 in grete estate and dyuersly clothed. Capitulo. xxij.

Of the grete Joye that Olyuer had whan he sawe y  
 fayre stedes and the ryche clothynge that his knyghte

Oly.

Ala. iij.



had brought hym / and how he armed hym / and of the ry  
che pauplyon and beaute of the fayre Helayne doughter  
of the kynge of Englande. Capitulo. xxiij.

**O**f the grete meruaylles that Olyuer dyde at the toz  
neyment / and how he dyde better than any other. xxiiij.

**H**ow Olyuer retorned in to the hermytage the secon  
de tyme without makynge hym for to be knowe. xxv.

**H**ow Olyuer came y<sup>e</sup> seconde tyme to the tozneyment  
and how he wanne the sygne of the defendauntes of the  
Iustes. Capitulo. xxvi.

**H**ow Olyuer dyde withdraue hym in to the hermyta  
ge after that he had baynquysshed the tozneyment and  
of the dyspleasure of the kynge and his doughter by cau  
se of the deed men. Capitulo. xxvij.

**H**ow Olyuer came in to y<sup>e</sup> tozneyment the thyrde daye  
and bare awaye the honoure aboue all by his grete pro  
wesse / and how the kynge commysed. xx. knyghtes for to  
take hym / to the ende y<sup>e</sup> he knewe what he was. xxviii.

**H**ow Olyuer was taken by the knyghtes that the kyn  
ge had commysed / and how his seruauntes banysshed a  
waye / & how he founde clothes & fynaunces. Ca. xxix.

**H**ow Olyuer founde grete fynaunces / seruauntes and  
clothes / and how he was ledde to the banquet and in to  
the courte with grete honoure of the knyghtes that had  
taken hym. Capitulo. xxx.

**H**ow Olyuer came in to the kynge of Englandes cour  
te / where as he was receyued with grete reuerence of y<sup>e</sup>  
kynge / and of all the other lordes and ladyes. Ca. xxxi.

**H**ow in secrete the pryce was ordryned for Olyuer by  
the Iuges commysed / and the counsayll of the kynge ap  
proued for to aduertysle Olyuer. Capitulo. xxxij.

**H**ow the kynge of Englande came towarde his doughter

ter and demaū ded her to whome her semed that þ pꝛ  
ce sholde be gyuen to / and of her answers. Ca. xxxiiij.

¶ How the pꝛce of the torneymēt was brought to  
Olyuer by dyuers lordes and ladyes / and what was the  
pꝛce. Capitulo. xxxv.

¶ How Olyuer requyred the kyng of Englande that he  
wolde reteyne hym of his courte / and that he myghte be  
keruer afoze his doughter Helayne / the whiche was ac  
corded to hym. Capitulo. xxxvi.

¶ How Olyuer was reteyned of the kynges courte and  
kerued afoze his doughter / & made the othe accustomed  
Capitulo. xxxvii.

¶ How Olyuer was surpꝛysed of the loue of Helayne / &  
cut his fynger in seruyng her. Capitulo. xxxviii.

¶ How Olyuer layde hym downe syke / and how Helay  
ne was syke for hym also / and how by her faders leue  
she wente and vylyted hym. Capitulo. xxxix.

¶ How Olyuer after þ the fayre Helayne had vylyted  
hym came in to the courte / and of the messenger of the  
kyng of Irlande that came and desyed the kyng of fy  
re and blode. Capitulo. xl.

¶ How Olyuer requyred the kyng of Englande for to  
gyue hym men to go agaynst them / & so he had. Ca. xli.

¶ How Olyuer after þ he was departed in armes from  
London came afoze a towne that the Irysshmen had  
besyged / and baynquysshed them. Capitulo. xlii.

¶ How Olyuer sente the kyng of Englande lēttres þ  
his enemyes were dyscomfytēd and toyned in to flyghte  
and of his enterpꝛyse taken. Capitulo. xliii.

¶ How Olyuer entred in to Irlande and assyged a ky  
ge the whiche was secoured of foure kyges / the whiche  
he dyscomfytēd. Capitulo. xliiii.

**H**ow the castell and towne where as was assyged  
a kynge of Irlonde/dyde yelde them. Capitulo. xliiij.

**H**ow Olyuer after dyders thynges sente to denouns  
ce his comynge to the kynge of Englande/and of the ho  
noure that was done to hym. Capitulo. xlv.

**H**ow Olyuer came in to the courte accompanied of  
seuen kynges prysoners/of the whiche he made a present  
to the kynge of Englande. Capitulo. xlvi.

**H**ow the kynge of Englande gaue his doughter Hel  
layne to Olyuer/ in guerdon of the seruyces that he had  
done to hym. Capitulo. xlvij.

**H**ow the kynge made Olyuer for to aryse that was  
on his knees/and of theyr gracypous wordes/ and how  
Olyuer handfeste the fayre Helayne. Capitulo. xlvijij.

**H**ow Olyuer wedded the fayre Helayne/and of the so  
lemnyte that was made. Capitulo. xlvix.

**H**ow Olyuer was vertuouse in appesynge noyses &  
debates/ and how his wyfe was with chylde of a fayre  
sone. Capitulo. l.

**H**ow Olyuer wente on huntynge/and of the bysyon  
of his wyfe y<sup>e</sup> whiche she tolde vnto her hulsbade. Ca. li.

**H**ow the sone of the kynge of Irlonde of whome Oly  
uer had slayne his fader at the tozneyment founde Oly  
uer all alone from his men/and toke hym prysoner/and  
of the grete dole that was made for hym. Capitulo. li.

**H**ow Arthur of Algarbe was regent of Castylle/and  
of the enterpryse that he made for to fynde his felowe Oly  
uer. Capitulo. liij.

**H**ow Arthur departed and put hym on the waye for  
to fynde his felowe Olyuer/ & of his aduentures. liiij.

**H**ow Arthur slewe a meruaylous beest in y<sup>e</sup> forest. lb.

**H**ow Arthur beyng sore hurte & lyenge in the wood/



oppered to hym an auncient knyghte that heled hym /  
tolde vnto hym þ place where as his felowe was pryson  
ner. Capitulo. lvi.

How Arthur by the comaundement of the knyghte /  
wente to London to the kyng of Englande / and of the  
Joye that they made to hym thynkynge that it had ben  
Olyuer. Capitulo. lvij.

How Arthur came and bysytte Helayne that wende  
that he had ben Olyuer her husbnde / and of the solemp  
nyte that was made. Capitulo. lviii.

How Arthur laye with Olyuers wyfe without bylay  
nous touchynge / and how he departed for to fynde his  
felowe Olyuer. Capitulo. lix.

How Arthur toke the kyng that helde Olyuer in pry  
son and made hym delyuer hym clene. Capitulo. lx.

How Olyuer and Arthur departed from Irlonde / &  
how Olyuer by Ire kest hym of his hors by cause that  
he had layne with his wyfe. Capitulo. lxi.

How Olyuer demeaned grete dole for the dyspleasure  
that he had done to his felowe Arthur. Capitulo. lxij.

How Olyuer departed from London / and came to þ  
place where as he hadde lefte his felowe / and how he  
cryed hym merce. Capitulo. lxiii.

How Arthur after that he was heled / by the lycence  
of the kyng of Englande passed in to Irlonde and had  
vengeaunce of the kyng that helde Olyuer his felowe  
in pryson. Capitulo. lxiiii.

How Arthur layde hym downe of a grete sykenesse / &  
of the grete dyspleasure that Olyuer hadde. Ca. lrv.

Of the dreme & bysion that Olyuer had foure nygh  
tes togyder / & in lyke wyse it semed to Arthur that his  
helthe was in the power of his felowe Olyuer / and that



whiche ought to be done for to heale hys. Capitulo. lxxvi.  
How Olyuer for to redre helthe to his felowe Arthur  
flewe his two chyl dren for to haue theyr blode/and gy  
ue it hym to drynke. Capitulo. lxxvii.

How Olyuer in a basyn of syluer brought y blode of  
his two chyl dren to his felowe Arthur / and made hym  
for to drynke it / wherfore he was all heled. Ca. lxxviii.

Of the grete myracle y god shewed to Olyuer of Cas  
tyll for his loy alte / in reuyuyng his two chyl dren that  
he had slayne. Capitulo. lxxix.

How Olyuer afoze the kynge of Englande and the o  
ther barons of y realme / and euen afoze his wyfe tolde  
his aduentures / and meruaylous fortunes. Ca. lxxx.

How Olyuer sente his felowe Arthur in to Castyl for  
to denounce his comynge / and how the kynge of Engla  
de accompanied Olyuer and his fayre doughter Helay  
ne in to Castylle. Capitulo. lxxxi.

How the whyte knyght appered to Olyuer & oppres  
sed hym for to kepe his promesse / that was to gyue hym  
the halfe of that the whiche he had wonne at the tozney  
mente. Capitulo. lxxxii.

How Olyuer and his wyfe demeaned grete dole bys  
cause that the whyte knyght toke one of theyr chyl dren  
for his halfe / and the whiche it was / and of other myste  
ries. Capitulo. lxxxiii.

How the knyght had pyte of Olyuer haufge knowle  
ge of his loy alte / and quytte hym all. And how he made  
hym known to hym. Capitulo. lxxxiiii.

How Olyuer gaue his doughter in maryage to Ar  
thur kynge of Algarbe / and of the dethe of Olyuer and  
Helayne his wyfe. Capitulo. lxxxv.

How Henry of Castylle Olyuers sone was prysouer /

and deyed in turkye. The last chapytre. And after is the  
epilogacyon of all the booke.

¶ Finis tabule.

¶ The presentacyon and introyte of this present  
booke.

**T**O the ryght holy and ryght well curous lo-  
uynge and magnyfyccence of oure saueoure  
Jhesu cryst / and of his ryght doulce and glo-  
ryous moder saynt Marye / the whiche ben  
the moerons of all good operacyons / & with-  
out the whiche none can be begonne nor ended. I Hen-  
ry Watson apprentyse of London trustynge in the gras-  
ce of god hath enterprysed for to translate this present  
hystorye out of frensch into Englyshe / oure moders  
tonge / at the comaundement of my worshipfull may-  
ster Wynkyn de Worde / not hauynge regarde for to laye  
it in another / or in more dyffused termes than the frens-  
she dothe specyfy / for in doyng so I myght lightly ha-  
ue fayled. Wherfore I requyre all them that shall rede  
it / or that hereth it redde / for to holde for excused my ly-  
tell and obscure vnderstandynge. In praynge our lord  
that he gyue me grace for to fynyshe it by suche maner  
that it may be pleasaunt and agreable / and profytable  
vnto the reders / and vnto the herers of the same. Ame.





Of the natyuyte of Olyuer of Castyll and  
of the dethe of his moder. Capitulo. i.

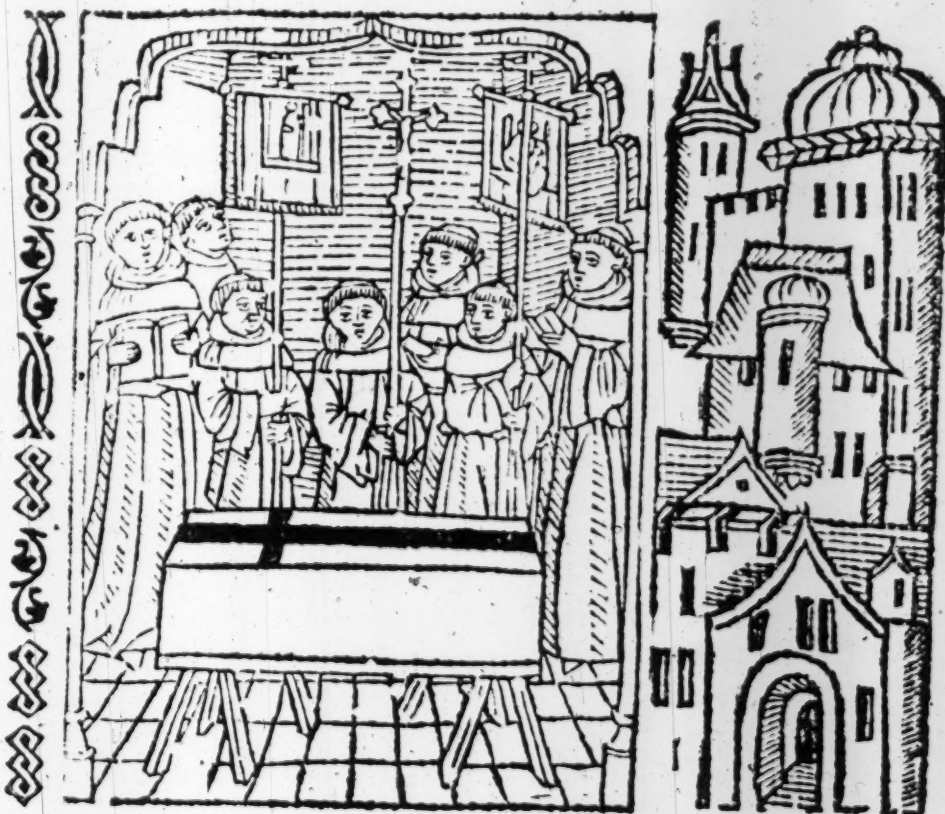


**B**ycause that I desyre y<sup>e</sup> hye and notable fay-  
tes of ryght noble and ryght valyaunt men  
of honour and prowesse for to bynge them  
in to memozye and recommendacyon / and  
also to the ende that all noble and vertuous  
hertes may be moued and styred for to do well / in lyke  
wyse as our predececessours hath done afore vs / and in es-  
Oly. A. j.



peccall / they of the whiche this present hystoꝛye treateth  
of. ¶ I fynde wyrtten that after the dethe of the ryght  
noble / and valyaunt lorde / and pꝛynce. Carlemyne the  
grette Emperour / and kynge of fraunce / after that he  
hadde lubdour / & brought vnder his obeyssaunce / in to  
our holy cryste fayth the Spanyerdes. ¶ There was a  
kynge in Castyll / & whiche was a ryght purssaunt pꝛyn  
ce / that was moche beloued of all his subgettes / that at  
that tyme was depyrued of the ryght heuourous felicitye /  
that is in maryage / whiche is to haue lygnage / and gene  
racyon / for the whiche cause all his subgettes were gres  
tely at mysease / for they despyed nothyng so moche as  
to se an heyre of his body that myght be successour of the  
realme after y<sup>e</sup> decease of this good kynge. His wyfe the  
whiche was the daughter of the kynge of Chalyce / that  
was a fayre lady and a vertuous / amonge her prayers  
and orysons / that she made to our lorde forgate not to  
requyre hym by his debonaire clemense / that he wolde  
sende her a chyld / to the ende that the countree abode  
not with out an heyrtour. Our lorde Jhesu cryst heyrn  
ge the request that this good quene made to hym / forga  
te her not / for in shorte tyme after she conceyued / and  
iohan terme was come she was deliuered of a fayre so  
ne / of the whiche the kynge / and all his subgettes were  
gretely reioysed / but theye fore was soone turned to so  
row for the quene had traualled so sore / & she lyued not  
two houres after the byrth of her sonne / the whiche was  
grette dyspleasure to the kynge that loued her so moche /  
And certaynly he had good cause / neuerthelesse he was  
not lefte alone makynge that sorowe / for all his subget  
tes bare hym company.

How Olyuer was boꝛne to be baptysed / and how  
his moder was boꝛne to be buryed. And how the Em  
bassadoꝛs were transmyssed in to Algarbe foꝛ to ma  
ry the kynge agayne. Capitulo.



**A**fter the cōplayntes innumerable of the kyn  
ge / and of his subgetes / y<sup>e</sup> quene was layd  
on bere and foꝛ to gyue comfote they ordey  
ned that the chylde sholde be boꝛne to be bap  
tyled / with the corps of the quene. And soo it  
was done in grete lamentacions / and the chylde was  
named Olyuer and after that y<sup>e</sup> serurce was fynysshed  
the kynge retoꝛned in to his palays / in the which palays

Oly.

A.ii.

he demeaned his sorowe by longe space of tyme / and he  
toke no comforte but in his ryght amiable sone Olyuer  
And in kysynge hym oftentymes he sayd vnto hym /  
Alas my dere sone thy natyvyte hath tored me to gre  
te Joye / and also vnto grete trystesse and dolour / but in  
all humylyte I beseeche our lord that he haue mercy on  
thy moders soule / And that he gyfte the grace that thou  
mayst be suche one as my herte doth requyre. In suche  
wordes and semblables he complayned hym often vpo  
his felowe and spouse that he hadde soo feruently loued  
The noble men of his courte / and also other of the real  
me were ryght dolaunt bycause that as them semed the  
kyng was becomen all desolate / and not soo famylyer  
with them as he had ben accustomed afore the dethe of  
the quene / wherfore they sayd that the kynges lamen  
tyng endured ouer longe / wherfore it is expedient to  
vs for to take aduysse in what maner we may cause hym  
for to cesse it / for he must put it out of his memozye / for  
he is yet yonge & lusty ynough for to haue pgeny & chyld  
dren / & there is nothyng y may cause hym so sone for to  
cesse his sorowe / and make hym Iocounde as to mary  
hym vnto some yonge lady / where as he maye take his  
pleasure and delyte in al gladnesse. These wordes were  
not sayd alonly in this absence / but also in his ptesence  
for they that were moost couersaunt with his persone /  
declared it often vnto hym / and exhorted hym for to be  
maryed / yf that they myght fynde one that were accep  
table for the dygnyte. At that tyme the kyng of Algarbe  
was deed / and his wyfe was abyden wydowe / the whi  
che was one of the moost excellentest ladies at that ty  
me of the worlde / the whiche had a sone by her ryghtfull  
lord and husbände that was named Arthur / the which



was a meruaylous fayre chylde / and Olyuer & he were  
bothe of one aege. The kynge of Castyll had ben aduer/  
tyled of the beaute of the quene of Algarbe / wherfore he  
sente his Ambassatours / for to haue her to his quene / &  
whiche Embassatours whan they were comen thider /  
were receyued with grete tryumphe and honoure / in so  
moche that shortly after she was accorded to them by þ  
lordes of the realme / as ye shall here. Whan they were  
brought in the p[re]sence of the quene and her counsayll /  
they declared the cause of theyr comynge / & whiche was  
gladly herde bothe of her kynnesmen / and the other bas  
rons / and after that the Embassatours hadde reherled  
that the whiche they had in commaundement by theyr  
lorde and kynge / they withdrew them in to theyr lod  
ges / with whome wente many knyghtes and squyres  
for to conueye them.



D. y.

A. iij.



How the maryage was treated bytweene the kyng  
of Castyll: Olyuers fader / and the quene of Algaibe /  
Arthurs moder. Capitolo. iii.



**A**S the quene sawe her accompanied with y  
moost parte of her frendes. And then that  
she moost trusted in sayd. Lordes ye knowe  
the cause wherfore the kyng of Castyll has  
the sene his Embassadours hether / wherfor  
re I praye you for to haue regarde in this mater / for I  
am she that by our good counsayll wyll be agreable to  
do that the whiche ye shall determine. These wordes fy  
nysshed / she toke leue and wente in to her chambre / and  
leue them alone with that mater. And fynally / they we  
re all of one accorde / that the maryage sholde be made /  
And retozned towarde the quene / saynge that as them  
thought there was but fewe pynces of more auctoryte  
than the kyng of Castyll was / wherfore she myght not  
be lyghtly better bestowed. And in effecte they shewed  
her the yonge aage that she was yet in / and also the ten  
dre aage of her sone. Wherfore they counsayllid her that  
she sholde accepte the request of the kyng of Castyll /  
The quene answered / my frendes I haue tolde you / &  
yet dothe / that your good counsayll and aduys / is well  
my wyll. And therfore make the respence / and answer  
to the Embassadours on my behalve / suche as ye shall  
thynke moost expedyent / for I shall perfourme it. And  
then they thanked her / and afere departed from thens /  
fyue / or syxe of the moost notablest / the whiche were cho  
sen for to gyue the answer vnto the Embassadours of y  
kyng of Castyll. And whan that they were comen to





they descended in the towne where as at that tyme the  
 kyng remained. And as bryfly as they myght / they  
 wente towarde the kyng: that all redy was aduertysed  
 of theyr retornynge. And after the reuerence done / they  
 recounted to hym how they had spedde and wroughte /  
 wherof the kyng was meruayllously Iocunde / and  
 at that tyme he was delybered for to goo thider within  
 a thre weekes / or a moneth for to espouse the queene. And



in lyke wyse as the kynge had deuysed / so it was accom-  
plyshed / and departed from Castyll with a lytell cōpa-  
ny. And then as he was vpon his waye / he sente worde  
to the quene pronouncynge his comfge. The whiche re-  
ceyued hym with grete melody. And hastely þe spousayl-  
les were sumptuously made / in suche a wyse as apper-  
terneth to a kyng and a quene. The yonge Arthur with  
al his puyssaunce made good chere to the kynge his step-  
fader. Also whan the kynge behelde hym / hym thought  
that he sawe his sone Olyuer / for to aege and bygnesse  
they resembled so moche that they coude not dyscusse þe  
one from another / wherof the barons that came with þe  
kynge was gretely abashed. Soo whan the weddyng  
was fynished / and that the kynge had sojourned there  
a moneth or two / he commysed in his stede a ryght noble  
knyght / to be protectour of the realme of Algarbe. And  
after those thynges done he departed / & ledde w hym  
his newe quene / and Arthur her sone. They rode so ion-  
ge that they arryued in the cyte where as the kynge dyd  
moost remayne / and were receyued with grete tryum-  
phe and Joye. The kynge comaunded that Arthur shol-  
de haue suche estate as his owne sone Olyuer had / wher-  
fore fro that daye forwarde / they were nourysshed togy-  
der / and loued soo perfoundly togyder that it myght ne-  
uer be lost / as ye shall here moze euydently after ensuy-  
nge / and for a good cause why / for they resembled so mo-  
che that oftentymes they toke one for another.

**How Olyuer and Arthur were commysed to a no-  
ble knyght / for to practyle them in feates of armes /  
And of the Justes made by them / and who wanne þe  
pryce. Capitulo.**

v.



**I**t was so that Olyuer / and Arthur began for  
 to ware grete. Wherfore they were taken from  
 the keepynge of the ladyes. And gaue to them  
 a ryght prudent / and valyaunt knyght / for to  
 demonstre / & enduce them in feates of armes /  
 as it apperteyneth to kynges sones. He receyued the two  
 noble chyldren / that were bothe of one aegge / and of one  
 beaute / and instructed them in all good maners. Than  
 whan they began for to haue knowlege / they loued to  
 gyder with so perfyte loue / that hey made alyaunce to  
 gyder of fraternall copany / in promysynge neuer for to  
 fayle vnto the dethe departed them / for consydeyrnge y

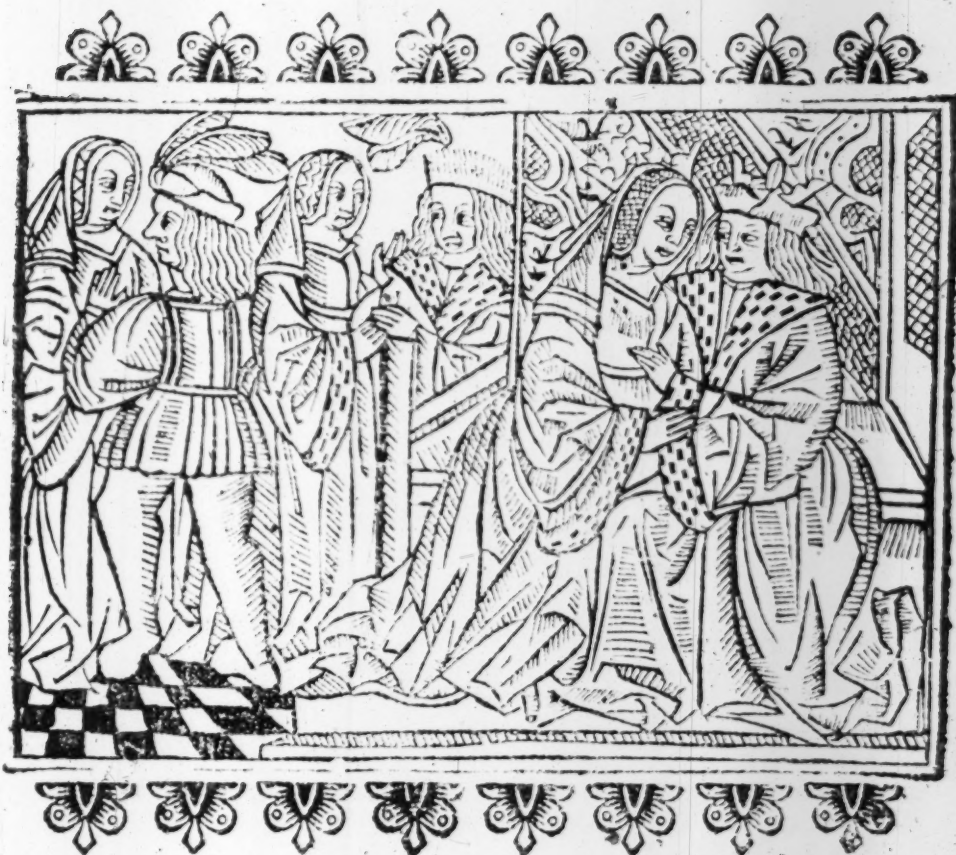
Wyll of theyr lord / that kepte them bothe so ryche / &  
put in theyr vnderstandyng that it shold be impossyble  
that euer theyr grete loue sholde fayle. The kynge and  
the quene / and all the barons of the countree / serunge the  
two chyldren so perfyte felowes togyder / and loue is in  
warbly were gretely reioysed / and thanked our lord  
therof with mylde hertes / yf I name them perfyte with  
out any defaute blame me not / nor meruayll you not of  
it / for certaynly of beaute / bounte / prudence / and humy-  
lyte / that ought to be in any noble herte / was in the two  
noble men. They may dysportes amonge the knyghtes  
and squyres / and amonge ladyes and damoyelles / as  
in dauncyng / and dryers other games / they founde no  
ne that myght passe them / as for dysportes that be vsed  
by noble men in tyme of peas / as at tennis / lepe / spryng  
ge / wrestle / cast the stone / cast the barre / or any other ga-  
mes / none wolde compare with them two. And byrthly  
all thyng that they applyed them to / became them well  
As vnto the regarde of Justes / and tourneymentes / it  
was defended them by the kynge theyr fader / bycause y  
they were to tendre of aeger as at that tyme. Notwith-  
standyng whan the kynge sawe that they were myghty  
saunt ynoughe for to welde armour at theyr ease / he ga-  
ue them lycence for to do crye a Justyng / and a turney-  
ment. The whiche Olyuer / and Arthur made for to be  
cryed / that thre auenturous knyghtes sholde Juste as  
gaynst all comers / the whiche sholde synde the there the  
fyrste daye of the lusty moneth of maye in complete har-  
neys / for to Just agaynst theyr aduersaries / with shar-  
pe speres / and the sayd thre champrons sholde Just / in  
dayes in thre colours / that is to wete / in blacke / gray / &  
violet / and theyr sheldes of the same helwe / and them to



fynde on the thyrde daye at the lystes. There Justed dy  
uers yonge knyghtes of the kynges court. And the Ju  
stynge was more asperer of those yonge knyghtes than  
euer they had sene ony in that countree / and by the re  
porte of the ladyes they dyde so knyghtly euerychone y  
it was not possyble for to do better as them thought by  
theyr strokes. But aboue all other Olyuer and Arthur  
his loyal felowe had the bryte and loos. The Justynge  
endured longe / it was meruayll to se the hydeous stros  
kes that they delte / for the Justynge had not synylshed  
so sone / but that the nyght separated theym / neuerthelesse  
the aduersary party abode tyll the torches were lyghte.  
But the ladyes and damoyelles / that of all the Justyn  
ge tyme had ben there were wery / and wolde departe /  
wherfore the Justers departed in lyke wyse / and wente  
and dysarmed theym for to come to the banquet or feest /  
and whan that the banquet was synylshed and done /  
the daunces beganne. And there came the kyng and y  
balyaunt knyghtes of armes / for to enquire of the lady  
es / and damoyelles who that had best borne hy as for  
that daye. The ladyes whiche were all of one accorde / &  
agreement / sayd that Olyuer and Arthur had surmount  
ted all y best doers of that Journeys. And bycause that  
Olyuer / and Arthur were bothe of one party / and that  
they coude fynde but lytell dyfference bytwene theym of  
knyghthode / they knewe not the whiche they myght suf  
fayne. But in the ende they sayd that Arthur had done  
ryght balyauntly / neuerthelesse they sayd that Olyuer  
had done best / unto theyr semyng. And therfore it was  
concluded that the pryce sholde be gyuen vnto Olyuer /  
as for the best of them of within. And another noble kny  
ght of the realme of Algarbe / that came with the ques

ne had the pryce of without / Whā the pryce of the Justes  
that hadde ben made / was broughte before Olyuer by  
two fayre damoyelles he waxed all rede and was as as  
shamed at that present tyme / & sayd that it was of theyr  
bounte for to gyue hym the pryce and not of his deserte /  
neuerthelesse he receyued it / and as it was of custome  
in guerdonnyng them he kyssed them. And sone after  
they brought the wyne and spyses / and thenne the daun  
ces and the feest toke an ende as for that nyght.

¶ How the quene of Castyll beganne to be amourous  
of her sone Olyuer of folyshe loue and dysshonest.  
Capitulo. vi.



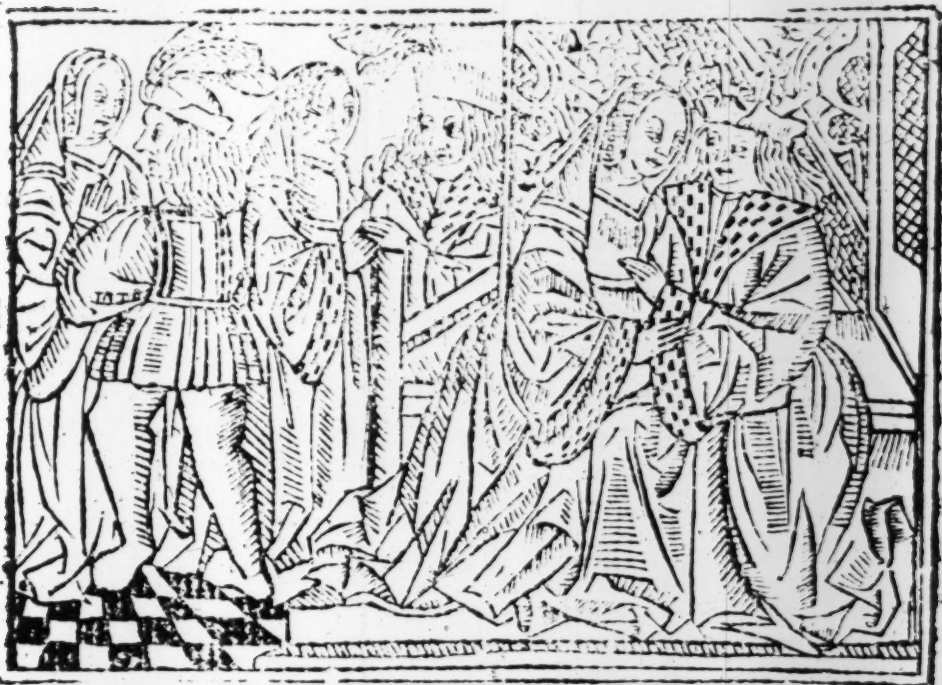


He two yonge men after that the feest was fynished / and the leue take / they wente vnto theyr chambze. Olyuer thynkynge that he wolde not be contente with that pryce. And Arthur on the other syde sayd that he wolde do so moche yf he myght / that another tyme he myghte gete the pryce / but not for enuye of the honoure of his fellowe. But good courage and good wyll caused hym to haue those thoughtes. On the other partye the kynge all redy entred in to his chambze for to go vnto his rest / the quene also thought excessyuely on the feest that she had sene the daye before. And in espycyall on the two yonge knyghtes was all her thought. Of the whiche the one of them was her owne sone / the whiche she may thynke dyd not dyspleasc her / and sayd vnto herselfe. Lady Mary what dure and aspre strokes I haue sene the gyue and receyue to daye. How gentylly it became the kynges sone Olyuer for to daunce / and the clothynge that he was in / certes that lady or damoyzell shoulde be well happy yf he wolde loue. In these thoughtes she wente to bed and fell on slepe / but that was not but yf she thought in her slepe that she sawe hym daunce all aboute the chambze. that had pleased her so moche the daye before. So began the quene for to entre in to soo grete a foly that it neuer lefte her / and that was grete pryte and downnage as ye shall here afterwarde. The daye spronge / and at the houre that they were accustomed for to ryse in the court / Olyuer and his fellowe Arthur arose and made them redy in the same wyse that they were accustomed / and in that estate they wente in to the kynges court. Whan the quene sawe them / she made them better semblaunce / & better chere than she shas wonte to doo / and called the



kynges lone aboute the necke/and badde them good mo-  
rowe. And sayd alowe bytwene her tethe. Olyuer my  
freunde I thynke that god hath made you for to be looked  
on in this worlde. Olyuer herde it well/and meruaylled  
hy moche wherfore she sayd it/ for he wyl not whether  
she sayd it for good/or for euill/neuerthelesse he put it in  
oubly/and thought no more vpon it.

**H**ow the quene gaue Olyuer for to vnderstande  
she loued hym/and that she despyed for to synne with  
hym And how olyuer answered her couertly/and all  
to honoure. Capitulo. bis.



**B**y space of tyme this passed ouer/neuertheles O-  
lyner was not ashamed to be amonge ladyes/

damoyelles/and was neuer wery of Justynge and turneynge/or other feates of armes that apperteyned to o/ny noble pryncce. And whan that he knewe of any greate assemble/he wolde not haue fayled but that he wolde haue ben there/whether that he had ben ferre or nere/and therfore eury body had grete Joye of hym/and sayd it was a grete reioysynge to the kynge of Castyll the whiche was al redy ferre altered in aage for to se his only sonne & heyre so replenysshed in all vertuous operacyons/ but fortune the whiche is maystresse of all aduersyte & sorowes admychylled his consolacyon/ & separated fro hym his electe welfare by þ quene his wyfe. The whiche beholdynge the gyfte of grace that nature had gyuen hym to fayre a chylde/ she was soo taken with his loue that it is meruayll to recourte it/ for whan she was by herselfe in any secrete place alone/as in her bedde/or elles where she sayd full often. Ha a Olyuer ryght fayre creature þ treasure of my thoughtes. How well for to curse thy resplendysshynge beaute/for I am constrayned for thy excellence to do the thyng that neuer quene dyde/for I must habandon the loue of my lord/and husbunde for thyne. And yf that thou haue not compassyon vpon me the surplus of my dayes shal be in anguyssh and dolour In this wyse the quene complayned so longe/that Olyuer and his felowe came for to se her. Whome she receyved with Joyous semblaunt. And whan any persone axed her wherfore she shewed more sygne of amyte to Olyuer than she dyde to Arthure her owne sone/ she sayd that she dyde it for to please the kynge þ better. With all She toke Olyuer by the hande and made hym by force for to sytte downe besyde her. And began for to deuyse with hym of dyuers maters/and amonge other deuyles

She demaunded hym by the fayth of his body / yf that he  
 were not amorous of some fayre lady. And he sayd naye  
 And then she sayd vnto hym Olyuer my loue. I can not  
 bylcue that the whiche ye haue spoken. And therfore I  
 requyre you that ye tell me the trouth in what place she  
 remayneth that is so eurous for to be your loue. Ma-  
 dame answered Olyuer / in good fayth she hathe none a-  
 bydyng. For there is so many excellent ladyes in this  
 realme / that I can not tell the whiche I may loue. And  
 also I doubt to be refused. Wherfore madame I knowe  
 well that ye do but mocke with me / for she sholde be but  
 a lytell happy for to haue my loue. For I am not a man  
 that as yet hathe done any thyng / wherof I oughte to  
 enquire any lady of loue. And therfore vnto this houre  
 I haue not done so moche / nor wonne / wherfore I ou-  
 ghte to be contente. The quene heyringe the answer of y-  
 ponge knyght / was sore abasshed. For the more that she  
 deuyled with hym / the more she founde hym constaunt  
 and ferme in his purpose / and alwaye she contynued in  
 her selpe / in so moche that Olyuer apperceyued a parte  
 of her wyll and desyre. Wherfore he helde his peas and  
 spake not so moche as he had done before. And she seyn-  
 ge that she spake no more sayd vnto hym. My frende yf  
 any grete maystresse requyred you of loue / wolde ye re-  
 fuse her / certes madame sayd he. I am not soo happy /  
 nor no woman so folysh / for to requyre me of loue / and  
 therfore there is none answer.

How Olyuer departed sore troubled of the requests  
 that his stepmoder had made to hym. And how y-  
 he prayed to our lord / for to reuoke her from her foly-  
 she / and corrupte volente. Capitulo.

Oly.

B.i.

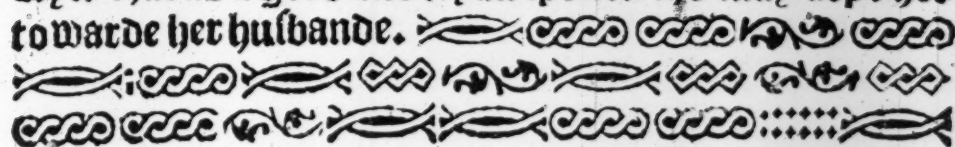
viii.





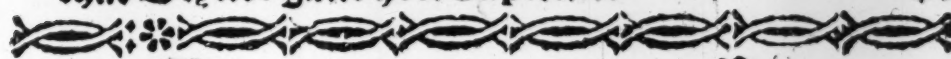
Olyuer that was not well pleased for to be  
 in suche deuyces with his fayre moder/ma-  
 de to his felowe a sygne that he sholde calle  
 hym the whiche dyde so/and sayd. My bro-  
 der the houre passeth that we sholde go the-  
 re as ye wote of/and therfore I put you in remembraun-  
 ce. Olyuer answered that it was true. And then he toke  
 his leue of the quene/the whiche dydde strapne his syn-  
 gres togyder at the departynge Olyuer was thā ryght  
 dyspleasaunt by cause that he knewe her in suche estate/  
 but he durst make no semblaunt vnto his felowe/for dre-  
 de and fere/that he wolde haue ben to dyspleisant. So.

as they were out of the quenes chambze / the quene drew  
herselfe aparte in to a lytell garderobe / and lete herselfe  
fall vpo a bedde / and sayd vnto her selfe. My loue ye be  
not soo folyfhe / but that ye knowe thaffayze in the whi  
che I am oppzessyd / and certaynly it shall not be lefte  
thus / for to morowe ye shall haue knowlege of all my so  
rowe / and dyscase And also Olyuer vpon that other sy  
de / was in grete thought as well as y quene his stepmo  
der was / for whan he was in his lodgys / he wente in to  
his chambze all alone / where as he dyde saye knelynge /  
My blessyd creatour thou hast formed me vnto thy sem  
blance / and hast gyuen me indygne more beaute than  
I am worthy for to haue / the whiche shall because of my  
destruccyon / yf that thou by thy grace put not reme  
dye Wherfore I praye the that thou wouchesauf for to kepe  
the honour of my fader / and me / and that I be not occas  
sion of the cupll wyll / wherin I se her at this present ty  
me / for I wyll not accorde therto for to deye. And there  
fore I requyre you with humble herte that it wyll pleas  
se y for to take her out of that dampnable oppnyon / and  
that thou reduce / an bynge her in to suche estate / and  
wyll / that as a good and loyall spouse / she may kepe her  
toward her husbände.



**H**ow the quene yet agayne declared her courage  
to Olyuer / the whiche was / that she wolde that he  
sholde do her dysordynate wyll / and y saye answers  
that Olyuer gaue her. Capitulo.

ix.



Oly.

B.ij.



**O**n the morowe after that Olyuer was come in to his faders courte / aboute the houre of dyner / he durste not leue his olde custome / the whiche was / for to go and bysyte the quene / and also to the ende that none wolde apperceyue his affayre. In contynent as he had salued her / he withdrewe hym in to the thyckest prees of the ladyes / bycause that he wolde not be alone with the quene his stepmoder / but that auaylled hym but lytell / for the quene without ony shame wente and fetched hym agayne / and toke hym by the hande / saynge that she wolde speke with hym. And by forse whether he wolde or



not she made hym for to lytte downe by her. And satte  
thynkyng and musyng a grete whyle / and sayd neuer  
a worde. Whā the quene sawe that he sayd neuer a wor  
de / she was halfe ashamed and chaunged colour / and  
sayd to hym. My loue haue ye no remembraunce of the  
deuyls that we had togyder. Cruely madame sayd O  
lyuer. My memozye is so small / that I haue reternd  
but lytell or nought. Ha my swete herte sayd the quene  
I suppose y your vnderstondyng is not so dull / to for  
gete in so shorte space / that the whiche is sayd vnto you  
But I apperceyue by your langage / that ye knowe my  
mynde better than I can recorde it to you. Madame I  
wote not what ye wolde saye. Certaynly sayd she my lo  
ue / to y ende that ye knowe it. I tell you that I wyl be  
yours. And therfore I gyue me vnto you all holly. It  
is not of newe that ye be lord ouer me / and of my wyll /  
But fere / & shame hath caused me to kepe it close by  
loge space of tyme. Neuerthelesse all doubtis put abac  
ke I put you in memozye that I am not of your kyred  
so nere / but hat ye may do all your pleasure with me / as  
ye wolde do to your lady and loue / and I also of you in  
lyke wyse / wher thzugh we may haue incōpreable Joy  
and solace to gyder. And yf that my fortune be so vnhap  
py / that my request be not vttred I shall occyse my selfe  
And therfore my loue / in you lyeth my lyfe and my deth  
Whan Olyuer vnderstode this / he was more abashed  
than euer he was before / and sayd vnto her in this wyse  
Madame where as ye say that ye loue me I thanke you  
hertly and as for that / that ye name you my louer / it can  
not be no gretter than it is as for my parte / for as vnto  
my moder / and maystresse / there is no serurce but that  
I wyl do it at your commaundemēt / as I am bounde

Oly.

B.ii.

for to do. I can not thynke that ye be so chyldeyshe that  
ye wolde loue me other wyse than a good moder sholde/  
and ought to loue her chylde. For I holde my selfe for su  
che one/that I had leuer dye than for to do any thyng  
that were contrary to the honour of the kynge my fader  
And yf that I dyde other wyse / the houre of my byrth  
ought well to be cursed.

How Olyuer refused all the requestes of his fayre  
stepmoder. And how she menaced hym vnto the de  
the. Capitulo.

**T**he quene ryght furiously/and Irefully bra  
ke his wordes in sayng. Olyuer cursed be  
thy beaute / whan y thou arte so eleuate in  
pyde/to refuse suche a quene as I am / but  
fro hens forth/y name of a frende y was gy  
uen to the by me/and that hath ben fyxed in the profou  
denesse of my secreete thoughtes / and also y reioycyng  
of my herte/by thy grete outragious cruelte shall be tor  
ned in to grete amerenes. For I shall name the my mo  
tall enemye/as one that is a destroyer / and sleer of lady  
es. For thou arte a murderer of me/and shall be cause of  
my dech/and that ryght shortly. But it shall not be with  
out the. For in all the maners/and facyons that can be/  
vnto me possyble I shall abrydge thy lyfe. For me thyn  
keth that it is reason syth that I must dye for the / and y  
thou arte cause of my dethe / that thou be parteyner of  
my dolour and anguysshe / notwithstandinge I praye  
to our lord that he pardone the/the innumerable euyls

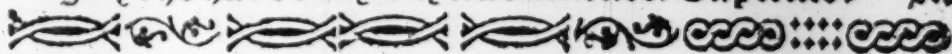
les that by the are lykly for to befall. And then she sayd  
vnto hym. Ayle of my quyls then / and go thy waye / for  
it is impossyble to me / for to be here in the presence of the  
people / withoute that my sorowe shall be apperceyued /  
Olyuer arose and toke his leue of the quene / the whiche  
went in to a lytell chambze / where as she demeaned her  
sorowe so mervaylously that it were impossyble for to re  
counte / and tell it. Olyuer wente towarde the kynge &  
salued hym. Soo after that he had ben there a whyle he  
wente vnto his place / and his felowe with hym / whiche  
knewe full well that his broder made not so good chere  
as he was accustomed for to doo / and demaunded hym  
what incuyd hym / that he was so sadde. And when he  
saw that he wolde not tell hym / he thought in hymselfe  
that he wolde not demaunde hym no moze / lest that he  
sholde be dyspleased with hym. All that daye Olyuer a  
bode in this chambze / and for to couer the better his dys  
pleasure / he made his men for to vnderstande that he  
was not well at ease / and that he was a lytell dysmayde  
for the whiche thynge his felowe Arthur was ryght do  
lent / and sorowfull / but it was impossyble to hym for to  
amende it / this notwithstandinge / he wolde not departe  
from hym / but after souper Olyuer requyred hym / yf  
he wolde go towarde the kynge / and the ladyes for that  
nyght. And that he wolde kepe hym without makinge  
any men syon of his syknes / and that at his comynge  
agayne he sholde fynde hym a bedde. So at the request of  
his broder he was contente for to goo / and sayd to hym /  
My good broder Olyuer it is your wyll that I shall go  
in to the courte / and bycause that it shall be late or that  
I come agayne / and that I myght happen awake you  
I hydde you good nyght. And I pray god grue you go



Derest so that your syknesse may to morowe be aledged  
 And tolde hym that he wolde not lye with hym þy nyght  
 Then Olyuer embrased hym with the teres in his eyen  
 and sayd to Arthur that he abode ouer longe. Arthur  
 apperceyued the teres in his eyen/wherfore he was soze  
 abalshed. For he knewe hy for suche a man/that he dys-  
 comforted hym not for a lytell thyng / neuerthelesse he  
 made no semblaunt / but departed with grete lamētacy  
 on. Alas yf he had knowen wheron his felowe dyde thý  
 ke / his sorowe wolde haue doubled / for he sawe hym not  
 after vnto the tyme that they hadde bothe suffred many  
 aduersytees / as ye shall here more playnly afterwarde.



¶ How Olyuer abode all alone in his chambze / where as he made dyuers complayntes / and lamentacions / and of the lettze that he wrote vnto his felowe Arthur / and at what thyng he sholde haue knowlesge / yf he hadde ony euyl aduenture. Capitulo. xi.



**A**S Olyuer sawe that he was left alone / and that his loyall felowe was gone / he abode all pensyl / and sadde. And sayd vnto his chamberlayne that he wolde go vnto bedde / and yf he sholde make euery body to auoyde for that nyght. And badde his chamberlayne that he sholde make prouysyon of paper / and ynke. So whan euery body was departed / and that there was no moo lefte with in the chambze but his chamberlayne / he made hym ready and wente to bedde. And then he badde his chamberlayne that he sholde go his waye for that nyght / for there is one that wyll lye with me / the whiche wyll not be knownen. The chamberlayne dyde his lordes commaundement / and departed / and shytte the doze after hym. And whan that Olyuer sawd that euery body was auoyded / there is no herte may thynke / nor expresse / the innumerable lamentacions that he made. And fyrste of all the grete goodes / and honour / that in that countree he had receyued. And after / for the ryght bytter dolour that for his sake were lykly for to come / as well vnto the kynge his fader / as vnto his felowe / and in generall al them of the kynges courte / where as he was so derely bploued. This notwithstandinge he concluded in hymselfe that he wolde departe / habandonnyng londes / possessions / and honours / sayng that the worldly honours were no  
Oly. C.i.

thyng in comparyson of the spyrytuelles / & whiche ha  
the neuer ende / and sayd that he oughte not for to kepe  
his carcass so deyntely / that was ordeyned in this worl  
de for to be wormes mete / as his honour and his soule /  
the whiche sholde be tormented in helle / yf that he wold  
byleue the dampnable oppynyon of his fayre moder. He  
thought in hymselfe that it were better for hym for to de  
parte by tymes / than ouer late / for he had no more trust  
nor confydens in the quene / seynge and consyderynge &  
wordes that she had sayd vnto hym. Then he toke the  
paper and the ynke / and began for to wyrite a lettre the  
whiche adressed vnto his felowe. In the whiche after &  
gretynge and salutacyons / made as amynably as any  
myght be made / he put in & lettre that for certayne caus  
es he was departed from the courte in praynge hym ry  
ghte debonayrly that he wolde pardon hym of that that  
he had not aduertysed hym of his departyng / for certay  
ly it had ben impossyble vnto hym / for to haue departed  
in his presence. And this notwithstanding yf that he  
were ferre from his syghte / yet he sholde not be longed  
from his herte / for in what countre / or in what place that  
euer he were / he wolde holde hym for his good broder / &  
frende / and that neuer on his syde he wolde forgete hy  
Afterwarde he prayed hym that he wolde make his re  
commendacyons ryght humbly vnto his fader the kyn  
ge and the quene / and vnto all theym the whiche sholde  
demaunde after hym. And then he wrote aboue. My bro  
der bycause that I wote neuer whā I shall se you agay  
ne. I leue with you this lytell glasse / the whiche is ful of  
clere water as ye may see / and I praye you that ye loke  
euery daye ones vpon it for my loue / for yf I haue any  
euyl aduenture / that water that is in the glasse shall

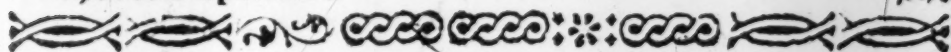


become all blacke / and that shall sygnifye that I am in  
some euill aduenture or empeschement. And then my  
loyall broder and faythfull felowe I beseeche you that for  
the grete loue and ampte / that we haue had togyder  
that yf so happen / that ye wyll departe from the courte  
of my fader / and neuer rest tyll that ye here some tydyns  
ges of me. My broder and true felowe / in you is all my  
hope and trust / aboue all them in the worlde. Of her thyn  
ge my broder I wote not what to wyte to you / but that  
ye may be sure that I shall deye yours. I praye to oure  
lorde Ihesu cryst that he gyue you as moche good / and  
grace / as my herte desyret. Amen.



How Olyuer departed all alone without any com  
pany / and came to a haven of the see / where as he fou  
de a shyp all redy for to departe / in the whiche he put  
hymselfe / with an Englyshe knyght that he founde  
there. Capitulo.

xi.



**A**nd whan the lettres were made. Olyuer  
made hym redy / and whan he was redy / bo  
the booted / and spored / and his swerde by  
his syde / he wente in to his stable at the hou  
re of mydnyght whan that euery body was  
retrayed vnto theyr ynnes / for it was a place all alone  
a good waye from the kynges courte / and at that tyme  
there dwelled no body nor none of his setuauntes / and  
at that tyme / there was no warre in the realme of Cast  
yll / but all peas / and therfore he myght the better / and  
the more secretely do his wyll / so he toke a hors the whi

Oly.

C.ii.



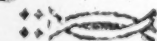

che that semyd hym best / and sadled hym / and then he  
lepte vpon hym / but that was not / but that afore his de-  
partynge / he put the lettre and the glasse in his chambre  
in the moost reddest place to his senyng / and there as  
it myght sonest be founde. And also he had taken a lytell  
purse / in the whiche he had put a thousande nobles / and  
other lytell bagges that were not of so grete value / bus  
what of syluer / and other thyng / they were worthe as

moche. He founde the gate of his place open / and the key  
 ge at that tyme was in a place / where as no gates were  
 shytte. Olyuer rode forth / and exployted so moche with  
 his ease / and also with the fayre lyght of the mone / that  
 he passed the towne lyghtely. And when that Olyuer  
 was a lytell passed the towne / he retorned by syght bes  
 auteous bysage towarde the place where as he had ben  
 nouryshe / and sayd. Oa kyng of Castyle thou lefeste  
 in this nyght thyn onely begoten sone. And thou ryghte  
 fructuous realme / thou lefeste thy pryncce and ryghtwys  
 herre. And thou my broder Arthur / thou lefeste thy sayth  
 full folowe. And there he toke his leue of them all in sayn  
 ge. And the ladyes and damoyelles / and thou ryall palay  
 se / in the whiche I haue taken my nouriture. I pray to  
 god / that he preserue all them that ben inhabytyng ther  
 in / from all euyll aduentures / and that he wyll transpoz  
 te the quene / and gyue her knowle / e that the euyll wyl  
 that she hath towarde me procedeth not of a Just / and  
 ryght full cause / from her. As these wordes were sayd  
 he retorned his steede in to the waye / in wyppynge a  
 waye the teares of his amiable face / and of his cloke that  
 was all arowled with the haboundaunce of teares that he  
 had shedde. In such sorowe he neuer stynted rydynge  
 tyll that he came to a lytell byllage / by the whiche was  
 a haven of the see. And he came thider so soone / that  
 and in so good an houre / that he founde a grete lord / the  
 whiche wolde departe from thens / and with hym was  
 a gentyll knyght of Englande / that was all redy with  
 the shyppe / and dyuers other gentylmen that wente to  
 warde the Cyte of Constantynoble. Olyuer demaund  
 ed of the mayster marynre / yf that he wolde lette hym  
 go with them / and he wolde colente hym ryght largely

Oly.

C.iiij.



for his fraught. But the mayster marynere answered to  
hym / that he wolde not. Wherfore Olyuer was ryght  
soy / & dyspleasaunt / but at the instaunce / and request /  
of the Englyshe knyght / the whiche was all redy aboꝝ  
de / he was content. And then Olyuer gaue the mayster  
of the shyppe his noble courser / for to doo with hym his  
good pleasure. And after that Olyuer had gyuen hym  
his courser / he entred in to the shyppe / the whiche aboꝝ  
de but for the tyde / and whan that the hye tyde was coꝝ  
men / they departed. The gentyll Olyuer was all alone  
for he had no knowlege / noꝝ none acquayntaunce with  
no body within that shyp / but by the suffraunce of god  
almighty / he acquaynted hym soo with the Englyshe  
knyght / that they were so good frendes / & loued so perfy  
tely togyder / that he myght ryght well auant hym that  
god had gyuen hym good encountree / and ryght good  
auenture / of the whiche Olyuer had ryght grete necessity  
te / as ye shal here in this presente booke afterwarde  
more playnly. We shall leue here to speke of the noble  
knyght Olyuer / in leuyng hym goo in the garde / and  
kepyng of our loꝝde Ihesu cryst / and of swynde / and  
of the see / and that he wyll of his inestimable grace con  
durre hym to a good porte and haue. Amen.   


How Arthur of Algarbe came in to the chambre of  
his felow Olyuer / the whiche made innumerable re  
grettes / and lamentacyons / bycause of his todayne  
departyng. Capitulo. xii.



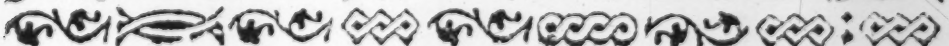
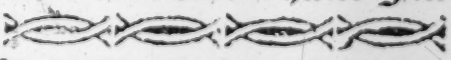


**E**re aboute ye haue herde of the departyng  
of the noble Olyuer / sone of the kynge of  
Castylle. Whan it was daye / erly in þe mornynge  
his seruantes came to his chambze  
for to be at his bypysynge / as they were ac-  
customed. And whan that they were comen theder they  
founde the garde of his persone without the doze / wher  
foze they meruaylled gretely. In the meane whyle that  
they abode afore the doze / and that the hour of dynet ap-  
proched nere / his fyfth chamberlayne came / and founde  
this company afore the chambze doze / the whiche as yet  
had not entred in to the chambze wherof he was abas-  
shed meruaylously / and demaunded what tydynge / &  
sayd to hym that Olyuer had bydden the euerynge bes  
Oly. C.iii.

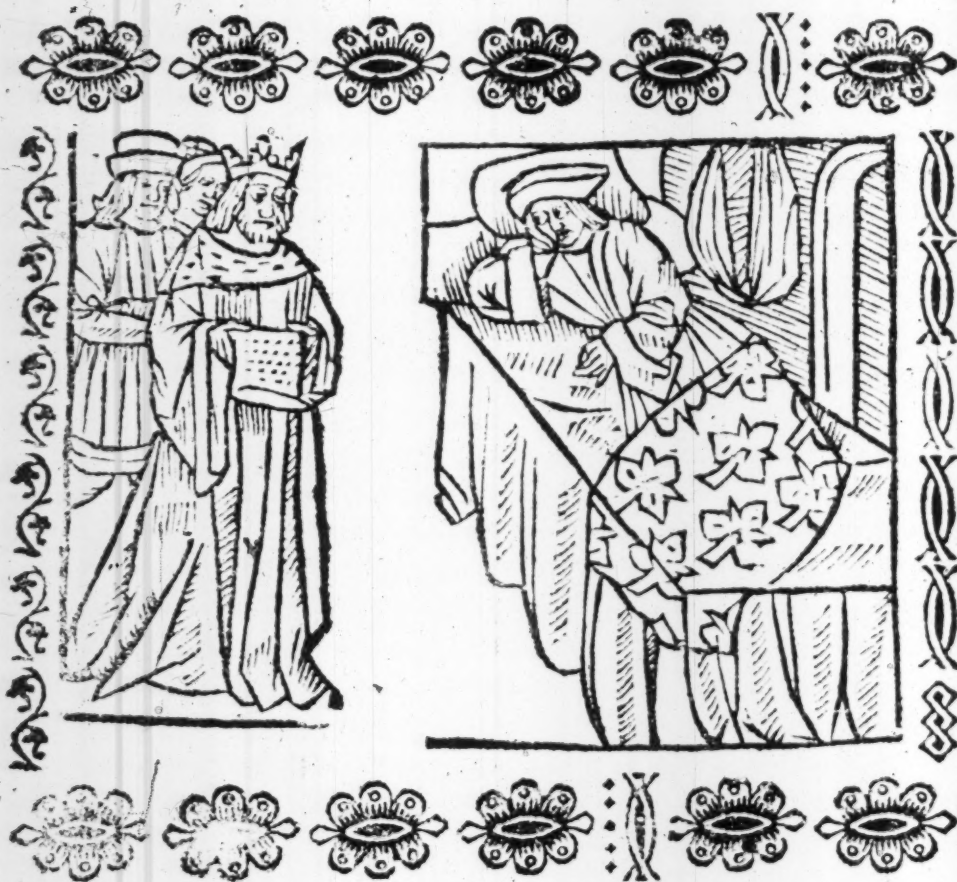
fore that they sholde departe / and asked hy why he was  
not in the chambre. And ouer that he demaunded hym /  
yf that they lordes were redy / and he answered. I was  
not there to daye and therefore I can not tell you whe-  
ther he be redy or not. For yesternyght whan he went to  
bedde he commaunded me to departe out of the cham-  
bre / and that I sholde not come agayne till that he ma-  
de me to haue knowlege of it / and therefore I sette the ke-  
yes within the chābre doore / and as yet I dare not knoe /  
ke at the doore / lest that he be euill contente with me /  
but it shall be well done that ye knocke at y doore / and so  
he dyde / but none answered hym / as in a place where as  
was no body / so they were there a longe whyle / in this  
meane whyle Arthur that had herde masse already came  
for to se in what estate his broder had borne hym that ny-  
ghte. And whan that he knewe that none of them hadde  
yet entred in to the chambre / he doubted lest his felowe  
hadde some grete empeschment bycause of y sykenesse  
of the dare afore. So he called one of the squyers of his  
chambre / that bare the keyes of that doore / in the same  
wyle as Olyuer hadde / for they twayne had neuer but  
one chambre / and made to open the chambre doore / and  
after entred all alone / and shytted the doore after hym. As  
sone as he was in the chambre / the fyrst thyng that he  
dyde / was that he wente streyght vnto the bedde wher-  
e as he founde no body / wherfore he was sore abasshed.  
And began for to serche all aboute / as well at y draught  
as elles where. And whan he sawe that he coude not fyn-  
de hym / he was so dyspleasent that he wist not what to  
saye or do. And thus as he sought vp and downe in the  
chambre / thynkyng and mulyng vpon this thyng /  
he kast his regarde a syde / and aspyed the lytell glasse of



his felowhe / that he had sene afore tyme / so he approached  
nere / and toke it in his hande / and in takynge it / he ap-  
perceyved the lettre / and he sawe evidently that he sus-  
per scriper was of his felowes hande wytyng / and  
so toke it and began for to rede it over. And when he un-  
derstode the tenour of the lettre / of all the sorowes / and  
angurys that ever he had in his lyfe / had comen to  
his remembrance / yet he shoulde not have had the. C.  
parte of the dolour / and angurys that he sustayned at  
that perfect tyme / and had his herte so replete with ame-  
renes / that it was force to hym for to lette hym fall downe  
upon a couche bedde. And then he began for to com-  
playne hym so dolefully / that it wolde have molified y  
durest herte of the worlde / and sayd unto hymself. Alas  
my lord / my broder / and my faythfull felow / certayn-  
ly I byleve not but and ye had loved me so profoundly /  
as I love you / ye wolde have given me some knowlege  
of your departynge. And truly it hadde be impossyble  
for me to have departed from you / as ye have departed  
from me. Alas my broder I knowe you for suche one / y  
ye be not departed withoute grete occasion / and to my  
symple wytte I dyde you never tryspasse / nor deserved  
agaynst you / but yf that your pleasure hadde ben that I  
myght have known somewhat of your dyspleasure / &  
yf that it be possyble to me for to knowe it shoulde deye  
in the payne / but that ye were revenged at your owne  
wyll. Ryght noble kynges sone the prynces sone sente fro  
heaven / for the salute of this countree / what shall your fa-  
der / and my moder saye. And in sayng this he swoyned  
And who that hadde sene hym / wolde better have Jus-  
ged hym deed than quere.



How the kynge of Castyll Olyuers fader came in  
to the chambze / and of the grete sorowe that he made  
whan he founde hym not. Capitulo. xiiii.



**A**ll the noble men of the court that abode at  
Olyuers chambze doze seyng that they had  
no ordynge of Arthur / that was entred in  
to the chambze / made it for to be knowen to  
the kynge theyr fader / and the fyrste cham-  
berlayne of Olyuer lard unto hym. My souerayne loz-  
be your sone Olyuer was yesterdaye a lytell dyscased /

made to auoyde all the grômes of his chambze/and abo  
de all alone. And yet at this houre all the grôme of his  
chambze/ was without the doze / the whiche be not as  
yet entred. And as touchynge my parte I haue knocked  
at the chambze doze/ but there was no body that answe  
red me. Also my lord Arthur his broder not longe ago/  
is entred/ but we haue had noo more tydynges of hym  
than afore. And therfore I put you in memozye of these  
thynges / for to do therewith your good pleasure. Then  
the kynge sayd y he wolde go theder in his persone for to  
knowe what it myght sygnefy. And came vnto y cham  
bze doze/ y whiche was locked/ but he made it to be ope  
ned/ and entred in to the chambze with lytell company/  
And incontynent as he sawe not his sone Olyuer vpon  
his bedde / he doubted well that there was some what y  
wolde not please hym to moche. And as he looked here/ &  
there/ he apperceyued Arthur that was lyenge vpon y  
couche bedde/ that semed better deed thā alyue / and as  
yet he was not come to hymselfe. And whan the kynge  
apperceyued hym he sayd vnto hym. My frēde I trow  
that thou knowest somewhat that I knowe not/ and in  
saynge that/ he approached more nether to hym/ and sawe  
that he remeured not. Then he layde hande on hym and  
felte that there was some lyfe in hym / and therfore he  
made to put wyne / & brede in his nose/ and dyde so mos  
che that he came to hymselfe. And whan that he myghte  
speke he sayd both for thy parte take this dysolute crea  
ture. And in saynge those wordes/ the letyre felle oute of  
his hande/ the whiche was redde afore the kynge/ in gre  
te syghes/ and wepyng of the redcr. And whan y kyn  
ge knewe the departynge of his valyaūt sone Olyuer y



he loued so derely. It was not possible to hym for to he-  
 re all that the lettre conterneyed / for whan that he entred  
 in to the mater where as it spake of the departyng of his  
 sone/as hye as he stode he lete hymself fall dowlne to the  
 erthe. It was grete pyte to haue ben in the chambre / for  
 they wylt not to whome they myght attende / eyther to  
 the fader / or to the broder / or to the seruauntes / for all þ  
 whan he myght speke he alyryed and sayd. O ryght mys-  
 serable kynge / wherfore dothe not god sende to the the  
 dethe / truly nothyng sholde be to me soo pleasaunt as  
 the deathe / nor nothyng so dyspleasaunt as to lyue / alas  
 my chylde thou made thy moder to dye / and shal be cau-  
 se of thy faders also that loueth the so tenderly. The whi-  
 che seynge thy righte fayr yonghe soryslyng in all  
 good werkes / and vertues / despyted in the / and that in  
 myn olde aage I sholde make my ryght arme of the / and  
 of my realme / and of al my frendes. And to the contras-  
 tye the swerde reboutrable and furrous / of myn ene-  
 mies / and of thyn / but now I se well that all these thy-  
 ges ben fayled / & put oute of thought with the. And by  
 the all the good hope that I trust to haue Iuryng my  
 lyfe is to lyue in sorowe. Neuertheles I praye to god to  
 gyue me grace to bere it pacyently. And of my welbe-  
 loued sone I commyt in to his garde and kepyng. And  
 that he gyue the as moche good as my herte desyeth.

~~~~~

¶ How the kynge sente after his sone Olyuer / & of  
 his complayntes / and of them of the queene whan she  
 sawe thre by her all that sorowe was happened and  
 comen. Capitulo.

rv.

~~~~~

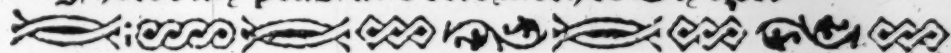


**A** sucher wordes so semblables / ledde the ryght  
 dolent kyng and the quene / the grettest sorow  
 that myght be. And there was nothynge myght  
 comferte them. Neuertheles a lytell whyle af-  
 ter the kyng wente saynge. Alas my frendes /  
 for to comferte this poore / and desolute kyng / and fa-  
 ther the whiche hath lost all his Joye / that is his sone /  
 wherfore I beseeche you euerychone / to put you on the

waye for to here some tytynge of hym / or yf that it be  
pollyble for to fynde hym / for whome I haue so moche  
dolour / and angurſſhe. Then the moost parte of theym  
departed at the commaundement of the kynge / and put  
them vpon .he waye / and for to make ſhorſe proceſſe /  
they were in ſoo many places / and countrees / that it is  
metuayl to recounte it. And neuer theleſſe they herde no  
tydyngeſ that were ony thyng pleaſant in that behalfe.  
And therfore they retorned towarde the kynge / vnto  
whome they tolde all that they had founde. And whan  
he knewe that his loſſe was vncurable / he layde hym  
downe in his bedde all melancolpous. They that beheld  
de hy / thought y he wolde neuer haue ryſen from theſe  
the quene ſeynge the grete maladye of the kynge / and al  
ſo knowynge that all theſe cupples proceded from her / y  
grete furour / and angre of the nyght afore / was chaung  
ged in to pyte / ſorowe / and dyſpleaſure / ſaynge thus. O  
vnhappy and curſed woman / thou arte cauſe of the exp  
le and loſſe / of the moost fayreſt / the moost gentyll / the  
moost wyſe and the moost knyghtely that cuer was in  
Caſtyle / thy deſteny ought well to be curſed / and who  
y knewe thy caſe / they ought to punyſſhe y ryght bitter  
ly. Alas my ryght fayre loue Olyuer / and my ryght de  
re herte for to be drawen with hoꝛſes / and for to ſuffre  
martyꝝdome / it is impoſſyble for me to amende the dyſ  
pleaſure and iniurye that by me hath ben ſpoken vnto  
you / as ſhe that was not mayſtreſſe of herſelfe / but was  
ſubgette by my fragyltye to wꝛathe / not knowynge thy  
grete bounte and loyalte / and bycauſe that thy loſſe is  
vncouerable / and that it procedeth from me / and of my  
cauſe / neuer ſhall I haue Joye. And as infortuned I  
ſhall vſe y ſurplus of my lyfe in praynge our loꝛde that



he wyll kepe thy ryght fayre yongth from all encombes  
raunce. Who that wolde tell the complayntes of them of  
the countree / it wolde be to longe to tell it / and therfo-  
re I holde my peas / and retoznerth to Olyuer.



Of the grete fortune that happened to Olyuer on  
the see. And how he and the Englyshe knyghte were  
preserued from drownynge. Capitulo. rvi.





¶ I haue sufficiently herde spokē here afore  
of the departynge that Olyuer made / that  
was sone and heyre of the kynge of Castyll /  
And how he put hym vpon the see / where as  
he was two moethes / or there aboute. It be  
fell vpon a nyght that a tempest / and meruaylous oras  
ge toke them / wherfore it was force to the shypmen for  
to habandonne theyr shyppe at the pleasure of god / vnto  
to whome they recommaunded them full often / as they  
that abode but his mercye. In that estate they were the  
space thre dayes / in ryght grete torment. And the tem  
pest was so hydeous / and terribble / that vpon the thyrde  
daye theyr shyp stroke on grounde / by so grete force that  
it claued in two pyeces / and all were perysshed excepte  
Olyuer / and syr Johan Calbot. Whiche seynge lorde /  
the whiche was not ferre of / toke some comforte. For  
whan they sawe that theyr shyp was clouen / and that  
all theyr felyschyp were perysshed / they sayd that it was  
better that they put themself for to swimme / for to saue  
theyr lyfe as longe as it myght be possyble. And therfo  
re eche of them in makynge the signe of the crosse / and  
recommaundyng them in the keepynge of our lord / lep  
te in to the see / and began for to swimme / trustynge for  
to saue themselfe / the whiche was impossyble for them /  
yf that our lord had not extended his grace / for they we  
re swimmyng so longe / that there was neyther of the  
but that he lacked byeth / and were at the poynt to haue  
ben lost. And also the water was so colde / and soo aspre  
that yf they had suffered none other euill / it hadde ben in  
oughe for to haue deyed. And in that estate they lenthed  
not ferre the one from the others / and requyred our lord  
with all theyr hertes of his mercy / and grace / and that

he wolde haue pyte on them / for they trusted neuer to ha-  
ue escaped. Neuerthelesse our lord that euer purueyeth  
for his true seruantes / sente them socour / for they wes-  
re all abashed whan that that sawe by theym a whyte  
herte / the whiche Olyuer toke by the hornes / and moun-  
ted on his backe. Talbot the whiche was not ferre from  
hym / gate vp behynde Olyuer. And in y<sup>e</sup> estate the herte  
bare them to the lande / and then he banysched awaye / &  
then eyther of them as well as they myght haue laudes  
and thankynges to god / that of his infynyte grace had  
preserued them / & this done they enforced the for to go  
vnto a lytell place / the whiche was not ferre from y<sup>e</sup> lee-  
syde. This place was a gentylmans of the countree / and  
whan he sawe them in that plyte / he had grete pyte on  
them. And made them a good fyre / and warmed / & chaf-  
fed them ryght well / & layde them in a softe bed. And he  
dyde to them all the pleasure that he coude. And whan  
that they were a lytell amended / he demaunded theym  
how they were escaped. And they recoūted to hym all y<sup>e</sup>  
daunger / and peryll that they had ben in / and how that  
god of his endlesse grace hadde saued them by myracle /  
Wherof they<sup>r</sup> hoost had grete meruayll. Notwithstans-  
dynge he beleued them ryght well / for he wylt well that  
there was nothyng impossible to god / wherby we may  
haue alwaye memozye herof / to the ende that yf we fynde  
our self in ony daunger / or peryll by fortune / and also  
to the occasyon for to flee synne / for whā a synner gothe  
to commyt synne / and remembreth the mercy / and pu-  
yslaunce of god / and deuoutely reclaymeth the ayde of  
our lord. Then god permytteth / and gyueth them suche  
comforte / that they ben deliuered from all temptacyon  
as to the purpose of these two / the whiche he preserued

Oly.

D. J.



from the peryll of the see. \*~~~~~\*  
~~~~~\*~~~~~\*~~~~~\*~~~~~\*~~~~~\*~~~~~\*~~~~~\*

How the knyght that was Olyuers felowe deyed/  
and of that the whiche happened after his dethe. Ca-  
pitulo. xviij.

**R**yght as they deuyfed. Olyuer demaunded  
in what countree they were in. And they tol-  
de hym that it was Englande. Wherof the  
knyght that was with Olyuer was moche  
reioysed / not withstandyng that he was sore syke. And  
enquyred of his hoost yf he knewe not a knyghte that  
was called syr Johā Calbot. He answered / that he had  
often herde speke of suche one / but he neuer sawe hym /  
but he saed that his pryncypall abydyng was in Caun-  
terburge / as they sayd all aboute / and sayd that he was  
but twenty myle from thens. Thenne the syke knyght  
sayd vnto hym / blessyd be god that hathe brought vs he-  
ther / for I am that same syr Johan Calbot / that I spe-  
red after afore / and my dwellyng is in the cyte of Caū-  
terburge. And bycause that I knowe that without the  
mercye of god I am neuer lyke to releue of my maladye  
and also that I fele my dethe approacheth. I befeche you  
that ye make me to be carryed to Caunterbury / to the en-  
de that I may make my testament / & ordynaunces as a  
good crysten man. And ye shall be well recompensed. O-  
lyuer seyng this knyght soo greuoussly vexed with that  
maladye / he was ryght pensyf / and sorowfull / as he yf  
whiche knewe not whether for to goo / or resorte. And  
then the gentyll Olyuer sayd vnto hym. My lord / and  
my frende I am ryght dyspleasaut of your maladye / &

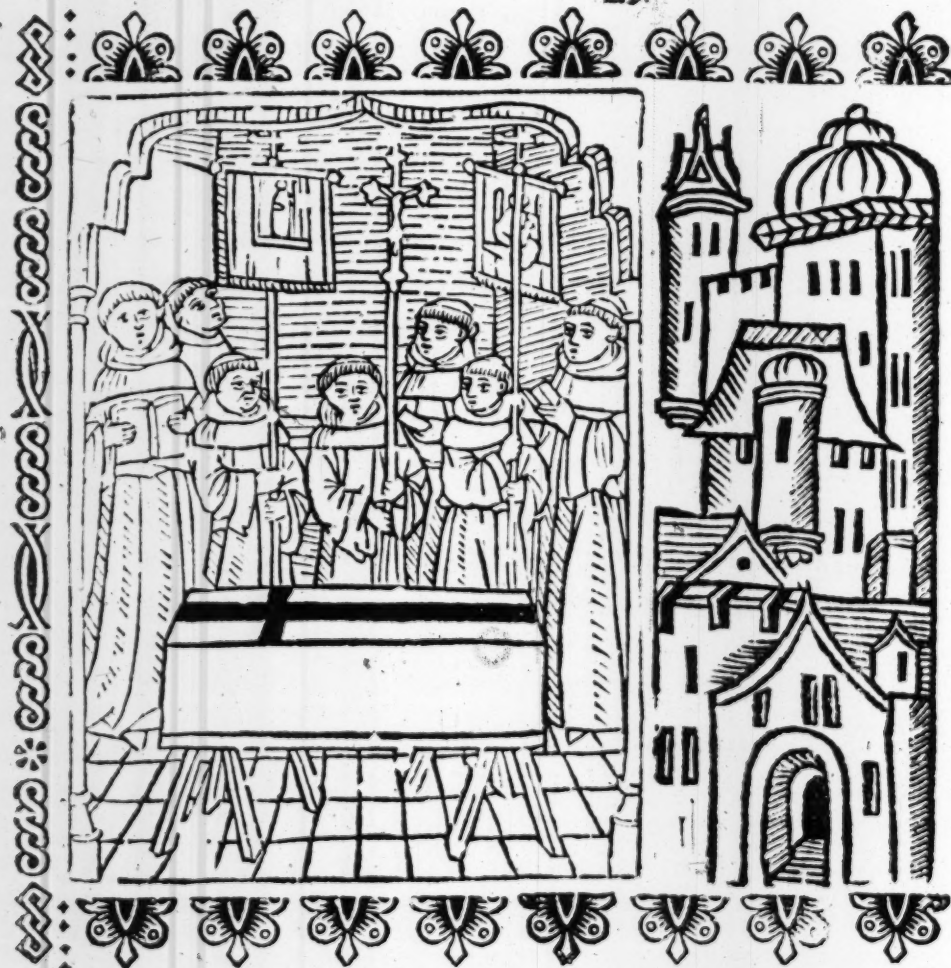
bycause that I haue founde with you so good company  
I shall neuer habandon you / yf that it please you / tyll y  
tyme that I haue sene as our lord wyll expose your sy  
kenes / for as for my parte I thanke god that I am all  
guarpyshed / and in good poynt / and redy to mounte  
on horsbakke / for to conueye you whether that ye please  
The knyght thanked hym full humbly / and sayd that al  
his volēte was for to go there as he had specyfied / and  
that he requyred none other thyng / and all was at the  
dyspence of his hoost / and wolde take nothyng of them  
And then he was caried in a hors bere to his place / and  
Olyuer rode with hym / but he lyued not longe after he  
was comen in to his place / and his frendes made grete  
sorowe for hym / but after his dethe they shewed hy but  
lytel sygne of amyte / bycause of moneye that he oughte  
te a burgeys of the cyte / he was in the sentence of cursyn  
ge / unto the tyme that the burgeys were contended / &  
he had ben the space of seuen yere in that sentence / as he  
the whiche had not wherof to paye / but yf that he sholde  
haue solde ryght largely of his godes / for to haue payed  
his dette withall / and in suche estate he deyed / wherfore  
the burgeys was not content but yf that he were payed  
that the knyght were put in holy grounde / but his hey  
res seyng this concluded / and loued better for to burye  
hym in the prophane / and unhallowed grounde / thā for  
to paye his dette / as they the whiche loued not y soules  
o they frendes / so well as they dyde the goodes moun  
daynes.



Oly.

D.ij.

**H**ow Olyuer made the knyght for to be buryed / &  
of the Iustes that were publyshed in Englande / the  
whiche was this / that who that dyde best sholde ha  
ue y fayre Helayne in maryage / that was the kynges  
doughter. Capitulo. xviij.



Olyuer seynge the grete fallte / and auarys  
ce of the frendes of that deed body / was no  
thyng well contente with them. He dyde  
all the dyligence that he myght that he we  
re buryed / as wel towarde hym that he ou



ghte the good to / as to them that sholde paye it / too the  
ende that the knyght the whiche he had knowen in his  
lyfe / for a good / and a vertuous man / myght be buryed  
in holy grounde / but it was impossyble for hym to fynde  
ony appoyntement / for the knyghtes frendes wolde not  
do nothyng. And the burgers sayd that he wolde do no  
thyng excepte that he were payed all alonge / that whis  
che was his dute. Olyuer seyng that there wolde be no  
ne other thyng / enquyred what the some of þe deth dyd  
drawe to. And founde that it drew to a. lx. pounde. not  
withstandyng that durynge his vyage he had spente a  
good parte of his. 9. nobles / that he had but lefte a lyt  
tell more than halfe / yet he was delybered for to content  
the burgers / and payed hym. And also he made the ser  
uyce of the knyght ryght honourably / for whiche cause  
he was moche praysed of euery body / and to the contras  
ty the frendes of the deed bodye / was moche blamed as  
it was ryght. Olyuer the whiche had but a lytell money  
lefte / soiourned a lytell space of tyme in Caunterburye /  
where as he herde tyrynge that the kynge of Englands  
de / at the instaunce of his subgettes had made a crye of  
a toirneyment / that sholde laste thre dayes. And ther  
myght come all noble men. And he that sholde doo best  
by the saynge of the prynces / and pryncesses / the whiche  
was comynsed therto / sholde haue his onely doughter  
in maryage / yf that she had wyll vnto hym. The whiche  
doughter at that present tyme / was holden for y moost  
fayrest lady that was in all the monarchye of the worl  
de. And the kynge her fader wolde not mary her to noo  
grete prynce / bycause he wolde not haue her lenthed fro  
hym. For he loued her so feruently / that he coude make  
no good there / y daye that he sawe her not. Also he dyd

Oly.

D. iij.

thynke that for the welfare of the countree / it was mo-  
re necessarye for to geue her to a hardy / and a valyaunt  
man / thought that he were pooze / than to a grete lord /  
that had not those vertues. And also as touchynge no-  
blesse and riches / she had ynoughe for the bothe / and  
for that cause he had made crye the tozneyment / that the  
moost valyauntest of the fcest / sholde haue his tryght be-  
auteuous and fayre doughter in maryage. And that af-  
ter his decesse / his kyngdome myght falle in to the han-  
des of the valyaunt knyght / and lord / for to kepe and  
defende it from all them that wolde greue it. There we-  
re foure hōdred knyghtes commysed of within for to re-  
syste agaynst all comers. And it was .xi. monethes syth  
that the fcest had be publyshed thughe all the realmes  
crysten. This notwithstandinge vntill that tyme Oly-  
uer had herde no tydynge thereof / and there was no mo-  
re but .xb. dayes to the tozneyment / wherfore Olyuer  
had grete dyspleasure / bycause that hym thoughte that  
he myght not come theder sone ynoughe / & also bycaus-  
se that he had but lytell moneye for to go theder withall  
Neuerthelesse he made hym redy for to be there / in the  
best wyse that he myght / yf that our lord sente hym not  
some empelshement / that he coude not go. And fro that  
houre he beganne for to fele the sparckes of loue / & sayd  
to hymselfe that he sholde be well eurous yf that after  
his grete aduersyte and euylles he myght attayne vnto  
so hye a thyng as for to haue her in maryage / of whome  
he herde speke soo moche good / thughe the vnyuersall  
worlde.



How Olyuer was assaylled by theues / and slew  
 theym / and of that whiche happened hym upon his  
 waye towarde London. Capitulo. xix.



Olyuer hauynge ryght grete desyre & wyll  
 for to be with the other at the toznamen-  
 te aforesayd / consyderynge that y<sup>e</sup> terme was  
 shorte / payed and contended his hoost / and  
 after departed frome the cyte of Caunter-  
 bury / all alone withouten ony company towarde the cy-  
 te of London. Where as the grete / and solempne feest /

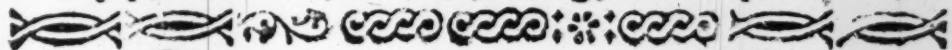


sholde be holden. And therfore dyuers grete lordes we-  
re cotten theder all tedy. And there came so many that  
all the lodgynges/and ynnys were full. Soo as Olyuer  
exploited hym so on his Journeye that he was a good  
dele auaunaged/as he the whiche thought that he sholde  
neuer come theder tyme ynoughe/for to se her for whose  
loue he toke that Journeye/and so he passed on his way  
in suche thoughtes/and in those thoughtes he came into  
a lytell busshy wodde/somwhat out of his hye waye/ &  
he had not longe gone therin/whan he mette. xv. theues  
the whiche were armed in complete harnays/and cryed  
to hym saynge that he was but deed/and he was enuy-  
ronned with them or euer he loked bp/and lefte his pen-  
sees of loue. And whan he sawe that he coude not escape  
without medlyng/he sette his hande to his swerde and  
smote one of them bpō the heed so asprely/that he claue  
hym to the tethe/and soo fell downe deed. And than he  
smote on the ryght hande/and on the lefte hande/so im-  
pyteously that he cutte armes/and hedes/in a suche wy-  
se/that the hardyest of them durst not abyde hym a bus-  
fet/for he had sette his backe agaynst a thynke hedge/so  
that his enemyes myght not endommage hym behynde  
And for to make it shorte he dyde so moche by the helpe  
of god/that he slewe. xi. of them/and the remenaūt fled/  
fore wounded. Whan Olyuer sawe that he was delyue-  
red of them/he thanked god of that vyctorye/and alpygh-  
ted of his hors/and tayed hym to a tree/and then he be-  
gan for to bynde some of his woundes/in the beste wyse  
that he myght/but they were not mortall/wherof he ga-  
ue thankynges to god. And so as he toke kepe to his woun-  
des/his hors brake loose/for he had not tayed hym fast.  
And so wente awaye with his casket of moneye the whi

che was at the arson of the sadell / and was gone all reop  
 a good waye or euer Olyuer apperceyued hym. Neuer  
 thelesse whan that the apperceyued hym / he begane for  
 to renne after hym as well as he myghte / and Olyuer  
 ranne so longe / and so fast / that he was a ymoost bzet  
 les. And in that estate the hors came rennyng bofore the  
 place where one of the theues was hydde / that had esca  
 ped from Olyuer. And whan the sayd thefe saw the hors  
 se / he knewe hym well ynoughe / and ranne after hym / &  
 toke hym / and incontynente mounted bpon his backe /  
 and rode his waye with casket and all. Whan Olyuer  
 apperceyued hym / he knewe well ynoughe y he had lost  
 his hors / and his casket with monye / wherfore ye may  
 well thynke that he was ryght dyspleaunt / for he founs  
 de hymselfe without monye / and also in a straunge cou  
 tree / where as he hadde no knowlege / and whan he saw  
 that all was lost / he sayd to hymselfe. O good swete lord  
 de Ihesu cryst I requyre y comforte this pooze vnhaps  
 py catyf / for all myn espertaunce and hope is onely in the  
 for I se well that fortune is contrary to me / and that yf  
 it procede not of thyn infynyte grace / myne enterpryse  
 can neuer be encheued / wherfore good lord I put me  
 totally in to thy grace and mercy. In praynge the good  
 lord Ihesu cryst that thou dystinge it after thyn owne  
 wyll / for lyghtly I can not haue worse than I haue had  
 hetherto / wherof I thanke the.



How a knyght came for to comforte Olyuer / and  
 of y promises that they had togyder. Capitulo. xx.



Oly.

C.1.



**R**yght so as Olyuer complayned hym of his myslauenture / there came a man to hym the whiche plucked hym by the slewe dyuers tymes saynge. Olyuer of Castylle be nothing abasshed by cause that I take you out of youre thought Olyuer lyfte vp his heed whan he herde his name pronounced / and wylt not whether that he hadde dremed it / or not / and as all abasshed in makynge the sygne of the crosse sayd vnto hym. I coniure the in the name of god that thou do me no harme / and that thou tell me who gaue the knowlege of my name. The man that seemed bothe fayre and reuerent sayd. My frende haue no



doubte of me / for I am a crysten man / and byleueth as  
well in god as thou doost / and meruayll the not yf that  
I knowe thy name / for thou ought to knowe that yf fel-  
des hathe syght / & euery wood hathe sowne. I knowe yf  
thy dyspleasure hathe adnychylled thyn vnderstandyng  
for and thou had thought on thy fayte / thou wolde not  
haue made thy complaynt so hye / for I haue herde all yf  
thou hast sayd / and how thou hast wyll for to goo to the  
tozneyment that shall be holden at London within this  
syxe dayes. Also how thou hast ben dysmouited and lost  
thy moneye. I am beholden vnto you for some seruyce  
and pleasure that thy moost nerest frendes hathe done  
vnto me / therfore I am he that wyll ayde the for to ac-  
complysh the good and hyghe enterpryse / in praynge  
our sauour / that he wyll gyue the grace well for to fye-  
nyshe it / and but yf it holde at the I shall furnyshe the  
of armour / and of hories / so well that it shall suffice the  
But it shall be on suche a condycyon / that thou shalt pro-  
myse me that of all that thou shalt wyne by occasyon  
of the tozneyment halfe / yf it be my pleasure to demaun-  
de it / and take it. Olyuer seyng the offere that the knyght  
made hym / sayd vnto hym as euyll auysed of afterclaps  
My frende yf the hour be suche / & that my fortune wyll  
consente that thou do to me this pleasure. I promyse yf  
vpon the parte that I trust to haue of paradyse / that yf  
ony good come to me by occasyon of thy seruyce / that yf  
thou shalt be perteyner of the Just halfe / or of the grettest  
parte / yf it were his pleasure for to demaunde it. At thes-  
se wordes the knyght answered / it suffyseth / and prayed  
hym that he wolde remembre hym whan tyme wolde re-  
quyre it. And after those wordes were fynysshed / the no-  
ble knyght sayd vnto hym. Myne owne specyall frende

Olyuer meruayll the of nothyng of that that thou seest  
 but kepe alwaye this lytell path that thou fyndest on the  
 righte hande / and thou shalt fynde an hermytage / and  
 there thou shalt haue tydynges of me / but I go theder /  
 but there I shall fetch the whan tyme is / so they depar-  
 ted / and Olyuer wente on his waye / and prayed the  
 knyght to remembze hym.

How Olyuer came in to the hermytage / and of the  
 lagage that he had with the holy hermyte / of whom  
 he was confessed. Capitulo.

xxi.



**I**n a lytell whyle Olyuer had losse the syght of  
his knyght / and wist not where he became / for  
all that he forgate not to holde the waye that he  
had shewed hym / and soo exployted hym that  
he came to the hermytage with pay / but he fou  
de the doze shytte / wherfore he knocked soo longe that y  
good hermyte the whiche was in his oryson came and  
opened the doze / and was all abasshed / for he was not a  
customed to open the doze at that tyme a daye. Whan  
Olyuer apperceyued the hermyte / he salued hym / and y  
good mā rendred hym his salute In demaundyng he  
what aucture brought hym thider at that tyme a daye  
And Olyuer answered hym. My fayre fader I praye  
you that I may be your gelle and clerke for this nyght /  
for I knowe none other place here aboute / where as I  
myght go to. And then the holy mā sayd vnto hym. My  
frende the hous and the goodes that god hath gyue me  
be at your commaundemēt. Then Olyuer entred into  
y chapell / and souped with the hermyte / that gaue hym  
bryde and water ynoughe / in saynge to hym. Syr ye be  
not vled to suche vntaylles / but and ye had sayd Saynt  
Iulians pater noster / ye had founde better lodgyng /  
notwithstandyng take it in pacyente / for and I hadde  
better / ye sholde haue better / but beware that ye swere  
not. In suche wordes or semblables / was Olyuer occu  
pyed the moost parte of the nyght. And whan it was ty  
me they wente to rest / but Olyuer slepte not so well nor  
so longe in the mornynge / as yf he had layne on a fether  
bedde. Whan the gentyl Olyuer apperceyued the daye  
he arole / and ayded the hermyte for to saye masse / the sa  
me masse dyde Olyuer here with grete deuocō / and af  
ter that the masse was fynlyshed / he confessed hym to y

Oly.

E.iii.



1  
holy hermyte / and amonge other thynges he recoūted  
vnto hym of the knyght that he hadde founde in the fo-  
rest / and how that he had called hym by his name. The  
holy hermyte assayed hym saynge. My fayre broder and  
frende / ye saye that all þ̄ saluacyons that he hathe ma-  
de vnto you / hath ben in goddes name / for and it had  
ben ony thyng elles but good / he wolde not haue sente  
you hether in to this holy place / not withstādyng that  
I am indygne. Wherfore me semeth that ye can not do  
euyl for to gyue credence to it. It is parauenture a kny-  
ghte of this countree that hath vnderstande your case /  
as he hathe tolde you / by occasyon that ye spake soo hye /  
And the best counsayll that I can gyue you is to remyt  
you in the holy garde of our saueour / and requyre hym  
that he wyll defende you from all euyl / and from all yll-  
lusyons of the euyl enemye.

How Olyuer of Castylle sawe come towarde hym  
Olyuers knyghtes and other folke in grete tryumphe  
and araye. Capitulo. xxij.

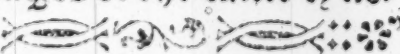
**S**as ye haue herde / sojourned Olyuer in þ̄  
hermytage with the good holy man by þ̄ el-  
pace of thre dayes / or four / & there was no  
more but two dayes vnto þ̄ begynnynge of  
þ̄ tozneyment. This hermytage was with  
in two myle of Lodon. And whan Olyuer wente for to  
dysporte hym without the wood he myght se the cyte all  
at full / and the place where as the tozneyment shold be  
the whiche was all enclosed aboute / and there he sawe  
them assaye theyr sadelles / and theyr coulers / and in ly-



he wyse they harneys / wherin he toke no grete pleasur  
 re bycause he doubted y his knyght sholde forgete hym  
 And bycause that the tyme was shorte / he was in grete  
 doute / and repented hym soze that he had byleued hy  
 so lyghely. And that also in the meane whyle that he had  
 soiourned in the hermytage / that he had not gone in to  
 the cyte / for to se her for whose loue so many noble men  
 put themselfe in payne and Jeoperdye / and of whome  
 he had herde so moche good spoke of / but he durste not  
 habandonne the hermytage / lest that his knyght sholde  
 not fynde hym in defeaute / saynge that he was not thes  
 re as he hadde appoynted hym to abyde. And in that es  
 tate he passed the two dayes. And whan it came vnto y  
 daye that euery gentylman and lorde oughte for to be

Oly.

C.iii.

fynde hymself vpon the lystes / and ye may ymagyne in  
what dolour was the poore Olyuer. And yf that his her  
te was soz / and dyspleasaunte / no body ought to mer  
uayll them / for he stode afore the doze of the hermytage  
alwaye herkenynge yf that his knyght came / for there  
fell not a lefe / but that he wende that he had comen / he a  
bode so longe that he was out of all esporaunce and ho  
pe. And he stode in that estate soze musynge / he herde  
grete noyse of ryders amonge the leues. And then Oly  
uer thought that it was some grete gentylman that ro  
de to the toynement / as the other lordes dyde. And the  
he kest his regarde that waye where he herde the noyse /  
And aspyed to the nombre of fyftene gentylmen clothed  
in blacke farsenet. And the surplus of theyr habyllemen  
tes was of the same colour / and they were mounted on  
blacke coursers / and theyr coursers were trapped all in  
blacke beluets / and eche of them hadde a spere in his han  
de / that was couered with blacke beluets. And then he  
sawe come after them ten knyghtes habyled in longe  
gownes of blacke beluets / and furred with martres / and  
ledde after them a courser mozell the whiche hadde bus  
kynge of clothe of golde vp to the bely / and he was en  
uyrzonned with .xv. pages mounted vpon coursers of y  
same colour / and buskynge of the same colour. And af  
ter them was .lx. or foure score pages of the same lynes  
ray reserved that it was clothe. 

**O**f the grete Joye that Olyuer had whan he sawe  
the fayre stedes / and the ryche parementes that his  
knyght had brought to hym / and how he armed hys  
of the ryche paucyon of the fayre Helayne the kyn  
ges doughter of Englade / & of her beaute. Ca. xxiiij.

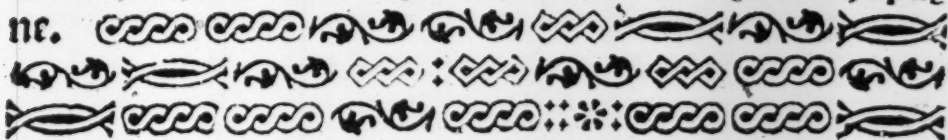




**T**his folke clothed and habyled as ye haue herde afore / rode vnto the hermytage and then euery body bowed and abode there all cove / and salued Olyuer that was afore y vore / and he full gently rendred to them theyr salute. And as he behelde that fayre company / hy thought that the knyght with the longest gowne was y same knyght that spake vnto hym in the wood / wherof he was ryght gladde / and wete for to salue hym / but as soone as the knyght apperceyued hym comynge he alightyd of his horse / and came agaynst hym / and after he sayd to hym. Olyuer good frende these me that ye se here I haue brought them vnto you. And bycause that we ben comen from ferre / for to do you service and honour I praye you that ye do so meche at his reioyment that

ye haue honour / and that we lese not our payne. Olyuer  
answered hym ryght curteysly. My lord and my frens  
de / ye do so moche for me / that I can neuer rendre you  
the guerdon / wherfore siche as I am ye may commaun-  
de me / for the body is yours / and at this tyme I can not  
gyue you no better thyng. I praye to god that he gyue  
me grace for to deserue it agaynst you / and that he gyue  
me strength for to doo as well as I haue the volente /  
These wordes fynnyshed y knyght sayd to hym that it  
was hys houre for to arme hym. And therfore in a fayre  
grene place y was afore y hermytage / there was a chay-  
re brought / wherin Olyuer set hym for to take his refec-  
cyon / and then after they armed hym dyligently In y  
meane whyle that he armed hym / the ladyes came in to  
the felde / and brought with them y fayre Helayne dou-  
ghter of the kynge of Englande / and ledde her in to the  
pauelyon that for her was ordeyned / and it was han-  
ged with tapysserye of clothe of golde ryght ryche / and  
there was a chayre reysed vp on hys in y whiche chayre  
was .x. steppes or that they myght come to y syege abo-  
ue / ouer the whiche was a canape of purple beluct char-  
ged full of grete perles oryentales / and had in the myd-  
des therof a Carbuncle / that rendred so grete lumere y  
it was meruayll for to beholde it. In the syege aboue as  
I haue receyted to you was sette the excellent Helayne /  
And vpon eche of the forsaide steppes satte two Iuges.  
That is for to knowe a prynce / and a pryncesse / echone  
after his degree. The other ladyes and damoyelles the  
whiche was there without nombre / put theym in theyr  
places / and scaffoldes that were for the ordeyned / and  
enslyned. And in lyke wyse on the other syde was a gre-  
te company of noble and valyaunt knyghtes and lordes

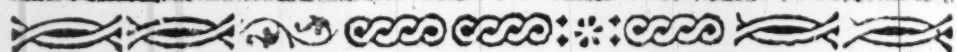
of this realme of Englande. Ye may well thynke that it was grete tryumphe and grete solace for the men of armes / for to beholde so fayre a companie aboute the noble / and excellent Helayne / and euerie thyng so well ordeyned as that thyng was there / for her sake / the whiche was so richely apparaylled that none can not reherse the lyght that the precyous stones rendred that were aboute her / the whiche embelyshed her excellent bysage. Who that hadde sene her in that estate / he wolde haue thought that she hadde ben a thyng of the other worlde / for I thynke that at her nayssaunce and byrthe / nature had put all her excellence / and grace. Yf that she was femely of body / and excellent of bysage / it was nothyng in comparyson towarde the gyftes of grace / where with she was endowed / for all excellence / and bounte / honoure / and humblenesse / doulsure / and swetnesse / and all other vertues and good condycions that in any womā of noble lygnage apperteyned / flozysshed in her. And therfore she sholde be ryght eurous in this wretched worlde that myght attayne vnto so hyghe a thyng as for to haue for his parte y flour and lyelle of this worlde. And euen thus euerie body put hymselfe in payne for to conquere her. And there was not one but that hym seemed that he wolde conquere her / or elles deye in the payne.



**O**f the grete meruaylles that Olyuer dyde at the tozneyment aboue them all. Capitulo. xxiij.

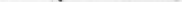






**A**nd then the ladyes were not soo longe in the  
 scaffolde / but that the four hondred knygh  
 tes were vpon y<sup>e</sup> felde / redy for to withstan  
 de all comers / as ye haue herde before / for  
 the tozneyment sholde last thre dayes. The  
 fyrst daye was orderyned for to Just. The seconde daye  
 for to tozneyre / not as they do now a dayes / but with  
 sharpe swerdes / and not rebatred. The thyrde day was  
 for to fyght on fote / and euey body myght haue an axe  
 of armes / and a swerde aboute hym. And bycause that  
 they were many knyghtes / they had grete place / they w<sup>o</sup>

out had knowlege that they of within were alredy at the  
lystes vpon the felde / and all the ladyes redy for to behol  
de them whiche shelde do best / euery knyght put hym in  
deloyre for to Juste the fyrste. Neuerthelesse Olyuer  
was not the fyrste / for there was many thre afore hym  
As the kynges sone of Scotlande / and dyuers kynges  
of Irlande / and many other prynces / and grete lordes /  
the whiche were so manerly clothed / that it was tryum  
phe for beholde them. There was but fewe speres bro  
ken afore Olyuers comynge. And whan he was among  
ge the prece he smote his hors with the spozres / and ma  
de his hors to torne soo gentylly / that euery body loked  
vpon hym. And in especyall it pleased the ladyes moche  
his fyrst entrynge in / sayng that the blacke knyght was  
best in poynt / and the fayrest armed of all the place / and  
after began the Justes / and euery body put hym in pay  
ne for to do well. The knyght that was Olyuers gouer  
nour sayd vnto hym / my frende beholde vpon this scaf  
folde the fayre lady that ye shall conquere / yf that it hol  
de not at you / take good courage / and thynke for to doo  
well. And then he toke a spere and gaue it to Olyuer y  
whiche toke of it no regarde / for he had fyxed his syghte  
vpon the excellent Delayne. And soo he hadde his spere  
in the rest a grete whyle / without ony mouynge from  
one place / as he that that thought nothyng on it. And so  
as the knyght behelde hym in that state / he sayd vnto  
hym Olyuer he slepe. And thenne Olyuer as a persone  
that is awaked out of his slepe / smote his hors with the  
spozres without auysynge where he wente / and y fyrste  
thyng that he recountred with his spere / that was lon  
ge and stronge meruaylously / was a post that helde bp  
a scaffolde / and vpon that scaffolde was moche people /



he was abylded in newe garmentes. Capitulo. .xxv.



of the blacke knyght / saynge that they had grete boléte  
for to se hym dysarmed / for to knowe yf he were as se-  
mely a knyght on fote / as he was on horsbacke / & yf y  
his gowne became hym as well as harneys. And there  
was many at the banket / the whiche wolde not haue be-  
there yf they had not thought to haue foure hym there  
for no pryse sholde not be gauen vnto the last daye. And  
whan it came to the daunces / and that Olyuer was not  
there / euery body meruaylled / so eche dyde the best that  
he coude. Olyuer was in the hermytage by the counsayll  
of his knyght / the whiche was departed from hym / and  
he had tolde hym that without doubte he wolde retozne  
vnto hym in the mornynge betymes / wherfore Olyuer  
thanked hym / and abode in the hermytage that nyght /  
in thankynge our lord of his good auenture. The good  
hermyte made hym Joyefull chere to his powder / but he  
made not soo good chere as they dyde at London. The  
noble Helayne was set in the halle / in y same wyse that  
she was sette at the Justes / to the ende that euery body  
myght beholde her. After that the daunces were ended  
they brought spyces. And after the fayre Helayne was  
conueyed to her chambrer / with foyson of ladyes / and so  
the feest ended for that daye. Nowe ye oughte to vnder-  
stande that euery persone made hym y best at case that  
he myght for that nyght / for to be vpon the morowe mo-  
re fressher than Olyuer. Soo the nyght passed and the  
daye came / wherfore euery body put hym in deuoyze for  
to fynde all that them belonged for the seconde Journey  
And whan that it was tyme for to departe. Olyuer ap-  
perceyued a grete company of folke / all habryed in res-  
de / in the same estate that they were clothed the daye afo-  
re saue y it was rede. Whan they approached Olyuer he

wente and salued his knyght that was clothed in a longe  
ge gowne of cramosyn / and behynde hy was Olyuers  
hors / and the pages of the daye afore / were clothed in sa  
tya cremosyn. The courser on the whiche Olyuer shol  
de ryde was a bayarde. And the horse was hosed in clos  
the of golde fyghe ryches.

How Olyuer came the seconde daye to the turney  
ment / and how he smote downe the standarde of the  
of within. Capitulo: xxvi.

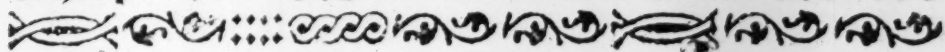


**A**nd then Olyuer came to the tozneymente  
and was the fyrst that entred in to the felde  
of them of without / but ye may well thynke  
ke that it was not without grete beholdynge  
ge of the ladies / and in lyke wyse of theym  
of within / ye may well thynke that Olyuer thus accom-  
panyed as ye haue herde / was beholden of kynge and  
quenes / lordes and ladies / and of all them that were the-  
re presente / and he the whiche knewe it / the beste wyse y<sup>e</sup>  
he myght made hym lyghtest for to be armed / for to gy-  
ue grete strokes. And bycause that he wolde not trauay-  
le the hors vpon the whiche he ought for to werke as he  
hadde neede therof. He mounted vpon a lytell hors that  
was ryght well accustomed for to make some pleasaunt  
thyng before the ladies / and therfore he faylled not at  
that tyme / wherfore the sayd Olyuer was beholden of  
euery body / and sayd the one to the other / beholde what  
a semely knyght he is / for by sympletyude of his body he  
ought well for to encheue a hye enterpryse / se how hone-  
stly and knyghtly he rydeih / for he remeueth noo moore  
for all that his horse can do / than yf he were not vpon his  
backe. Amonge these deuyses / the kynge's sone of Scots  
lande came ryght rychely clothed / and strongly accom-  
panyed with valyaunt knyghtes / that wolbe tozner  
that daye with hym / and also the moost parte for the gar-  
de of his persone. After came the kyng Maquen oz  
two other kynges of Irland / of whome I knowe not  
the names. And after came the duke of Burdon / and the  
Erle of Flaundres. And then came in the duke of Glou-  
cestre / the duke of Lancastre / the duke of Bedforde / the  
duke of Northfolke / and the duke of Somerset. And so  
came in the Erle of Northumberland / the Erle of Leice-

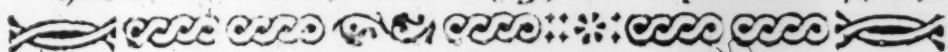


trete/and y<sup>e</sup> erle of Salysburye/and so many other lordes/that was it meruayll. Whan all these prynces/and lordes were assembled / & that they sawe there came no moo / it was cryed by the kynge that euery man sholde do his deuoyr. Then the two sygnes/that is to knowe that of within/and in lyke wyse that of withoute began for to approche. There y<sup>e</sup> myghte haue sene cleue many basynettes/and many a knyght beten downe to y<sup>e</sup> erthe. Olyuer that was mounted vpon his courser / helde his swerde in his hande / wherwith he dyde meruaylles of armes/ he wente sekynge them that hym thought were the moost valyauntest/and with them he had ado gladly/and whan he hadde remembraunce / or leyser to loke on hye / and that he myghte beholde the fayre Helayne/ his force & hardynesse doubled. Wherfore none may recounte the valyauntnes & feates of armes that he dydde / Now it was ordeyned that & the sygne of them of within myght by force of armes be broughte to a place that was there/ by they<sup>r</sup> aduersary party/ that the tozneyng sholde be accomplisshed. Therfore they of without put themselves in payn for to wyne it. And Olyuer the whiche rested neuer in one place/and to whome euery body made waye/ encountered hym that bare the sygne of the of within / & gaue hym suche a stroke that he made hym bowe his heed vnder the hors necke/and was so astonyed that he hadde almost fallen to the erthe/and Olyuer returned his stroke thynkynge for to haue cutte the shafte of the sygne/ but he founde it so stronge/and so well banded with yron/that he coude not empayre it/ but it was force to the knyght that helde it/for to lette it go fro hym and so it fell to the erthe/ then y<sup>e</sup> myght haue herd grete shoutes on bothe parties / & they of within put them

lete in vantage for to reyse vp theyr sygne agayne. But  
that was impossyble for them / because of the balpaunte  
Olyuer that defended it / with y good helpe that he had  
of his partye.



How Olyuer returned in to his hermytage / after  
y he had wonne the byctorye of the tozneyenge / and  
of the dyspleasure that the kynge and his daughter  
had because of the deed knyghtes. Capitulo. xxvij.



**T**he rekowes of that sygne / was many a  
knyght slayne on bothe parties / but moore  
of them of within / than of without / wherof  
the kynge was not well content for to se his  
men dye so. And then he comaunded to two  
or thre knyghtes the whiche were ordeyned whan they  
remoued any debates / that they sholde put them in pay  
ne for to repeale them / to go hastely and departe them /  
the whiche without pyte slewe eche other. They dyd the  
kynge's commaundement / but or they myght come to y  
place where the debate was / there was Olyuers miruay  
lous strokes gyven. And the hystorye sayth that a balys  
aunt knyght of within whan Olyuer dyde so many fea  
tes of armes approached to hym / and toke his swerde in  
bothe his handes for to geue the greater stroke / and iue  
so as he hadde bothe his armes eleuate for to smyte Oly  
uer. Olyuer apperceyued it / and basted hym for to smys  
te fyrste / and gaue hym so grete a stroke that he made to  
fle in to y felde / y swerde with bothe his armes / wher  
fore all they y saide it miruaylled. And in yke wyse the

Oly.

J.ij.

kyng began for to blyſſe hym ſayng / yf this rede knyght  
that was yeſterdaye clothed in blacke lyue lōge / or yf y  
fyghtynge be not departed / he wyll make dye the moost  
parte of my men / he is a lyuyng deuyll ſe how his ſwer  
de dothe cutte / he hath done ſoo moche / that it is of the  
ſaine colour that his armour is of. The knyght that he  
hath ſmyten downe ſhal neuer cut no purſe. In that eſ  
tate deuyled the kyng / and on y other parte the ladyes  
hadde alwaye theyr eye on hym / but the fayre Belayne  
had not the courage for to beholde hym / bycauſe of the  
effuſion of blode of her gentyl knyghtes / but it was not  
longe after / but they were departed / and was cryed by  
the kyng that none ſo herdy upon payne of deeth for to  
tozneye any moze for that daye. And therfore eueri bo  
dy dyde with drawe hy / and it was tyme for Myrour to  
retorne into his hermytage / whether as his knyght dyd  
brynge hym / and thenne toke leue of hym / and tolde hy  
that he wolde not forgete hym the nexte morowe. The  
kyng and his excellent doughter retourned in to the ne  
ble cyte. And ſouped y nyght in the fayre Belayns cham  
bre / the whiche was not wel at eaſe bycauſe ſhe hadde  
ſyttten ſoo longe / and alſo for the ſlaughter that ſhe had  
ſene / wherfore ſhe ſayd to her fader. My lord my fader  
be ye not dyspleaſant for the pryecous ſyghte that was  
to daye / ye make your men to dye without cauſe. I by  
leue not that it is for me / for and I knewe it I ſholde ra  
ther make an othe neuer to be maryed / wher ore I beſe  
che you that ye wyll accorde me y they Juſt or tozneye /  
no moze in the ſacyon that they haue done to daye. The  
kyng answered her. My doughter thynke for to make  
good chere / and take no thought of nothyng / for of this  
that is happened I am moze dyspleaſant than ye be /







When the kyng was in his chābre he enquired how many knyghtes there had ben slayn & founde deed of thē of win to the nombre of .xlii. & of thē of without. .xv. wherfore the kyng was moche angrye & commaunded that .xlii. other knyghtes sholde be put in the places of þe deed knyghtes / and yf there were ony hurte that myght not helpe themself on the morowe / that they sholde put in other. The thyng was done so / and vpon the morowe the kyng wente in to his scaffolde / where as he dyed / and the fayre Delayne also durynge the dyner tyme they spake of nothyng but of the torenyng. of the daye past. And the kyng sayd that he was ryght dyspleasūt bycause that he myght not se hym that dyd so grete dedes of armes / wherfore he commaunded. .xx. knyghtes that they sholde haue alwaye regarde to hym and that they sholde not fayle to bryng hym to the banquet / for he wolde se hym. He commaunded also that the nombre of two thousande fyghtynge men were armed / for to kepe the felde from all debates and noyses. The meane whyle the maysters stewardes and controllers / were in the palays makynge all thyng redy for the banquet and feest / that sholde be at nyght / the whiche sholde be without comparyson of al that euer hadde bē sene in this realme. The houre approached that they sholde fynde them in the felde. And the foure hondred knyghtes of within / with the two thousande came in to the felde / wherof some of them hadde leuer haue bē comynsed to make redy þe feest / for the example that the rede knyght had gyuen them the daye afore / the whiche all redy dyd arme hym / & was comen vpon his hors clothed in whyte and all his folke in the same sute / in the same manere

that they came the daye afore / saue that they had ben clo  
thed in rede / and soo came in to the felde on horsbacke / &  
put hem selfe besyde the kynges sone of Scotlande / and  
all the other alyght in lyke wyse. And then whan all we  
re assembled / the kyng hadde two knyghtes for to goo  
loke how many they were of without. Then they wente  
downe / and tolde the Lordes the kynges wyll and com  
maundement. Then they toke a gyrdell and made them  
for to passe vnderneath / and founde that they of without  
were well foure hondred. And a knyght by the commaū  
dement of the kyng sayd that euery body sholde vngyr  
de his swerde / and sayd that the are suffysed / and after  
that the batayll was begonne / the Kyng sente men for  
to departe them / and badde that none were so hardy for  
to smyte on the heed with the trenchaūt after y tyme / &  
aduertysed them y the pryce sholde be gruen at nyght /  
to hym that hath deserued it. And thenne it was tolde  
them that they myght begynne whan it sholde seme the  
good. Then they begāne for to smyte in suche wyse that  
it was a goodly syght to beholde them. It was a semely  
syght for to beholde howe Olyuer demeaned hym with  
his are / for he smote so puyssauntly that he made hym  
awaye large ynoughe. Whan they approached nere the  
one smote vpon y other so impetuously that it was mer  
uayll they myght stande. Olyuer dzemed not / for he gas  
ue so pesaunt strokes / that hym that he hytte a ryght he  
made hym to kysse the grounde / and he dyde soo moche  
that there durst not abyde afore hym / soo with force of  
smytynge / his are that was grete and longe dyde brycke  
And whan he saue that he approached hym to a knyght  
and pulled his are out of his handes / by suche a myght  
and by suche a chyualtrous puyssaunce / vertue and also





**A**nd then the kynge and the ladyes retorned  
in to the cyte / & euery body withdrew the  
in to theyr habytacions / so the deed kynges  
body was bozne in to London by his men /  
where as his body was enseiglyd / and put  
in a hors lyttre couered with blacke / and in that estate /  
in grete lamentacyons was ledde in to his realme. Oly-  
uer was yet in the felde where as he cryed after his hors  
but none answered hy / nor he coude espye none of them  
that came with hym / wherof he had grete meruayl / and  
was so dyspleasunt that he wist not what to do / not w-  
standynge his armour / he put hym selfe on the waye to  
warde the hermytage all ashamed / saynge that he sawe  
well his euyll auenture / and that in all fortune was to  
hym contrarpe. And therfore he delybered in hym selfe  
for to habandonne the good that myght come to hym by  
occasyon of the tozneyment / and not for to make hym to  
be knowen to ony persone lyuyng. Euen so as he wens  
te thynkynge on his euyll aduenture / the .xx. knyghtes  
that by the kynge were commysed / and ordeyned for to  
haue regarde on hym / soughte hym on euery syde / and  
dyde soo moche that they apperceyued hy goynge alone  
Then they smote theyr horses with the spores / and dyd  
so moche that they ouertoke hym / and sayd to hym. Ges-  
tyll knyght lette it not tozne you to dyspleasure / yf that  
we do that the whiche was comaunded vs by the kynge  
for he hath comaunded vs for to withholde you / y whi-  
che requyrezth you / that it wyll please you / for to be this  
nyght at the daunces / and at the banquet / and therfore  
by hym we laye handes on you. It was force to Olyuer  
to obeye the commaundement of the kynge. And therfo-  
re all ashamed he retorned to London with the forsayd

Oly.

G. J.

knyghtes. But durynge the waye it was not withoute  
pleſaunt thoughtes/for whan he bethoughte hym of the  
grete pompes/and ryche habyllementes that he had du  
rynge the other dayes/and now he founde hym alone w  
out any knowlege / and that it was force for hym to be  
at y banker and fecst with the other/without goldne/or  
other clothyng/ſaue in his harneys/but yf he foude ſo  
me that wolde lenne hym a goldne/he was in ſoo grete  
dyspleſaunce/that he wolde haue ben a. M. myle thens  
yf it hadde ben poſſyble for hym. In that eſtate they ro  
de tyll they came to London / and dyſlodged one of the  
xx. knyghtes for to lodge hym / and demaunded hym in  
what place they wolde fynde his ſeruauntes / for to ſen  
de for them. The pooze Olyuer all aſhamed ſayd. Cert  
taynlye I can not tell you where to fynde them / but  
for this nyghte I ſhall be mayſter / and barlet. As they  
were in theſe deuyles the hoſteſſe came to Olyuers per  
ſone and ſayd to hym alowe. My lord it is not longe a  
go ſyth one of your ſeruauntes was here / and gaue me  
this lytell fardell/tellynge me that your clothes were in  
it / and hathe layde the bogette vnder your beddes heed  
For all your ſeruauntes ben gone/and ye ſhall fynde the  
nomore. And tolde me that the knyght that ye wote of/  
recommāundeth hym to you/and putteth you in memo  
rye of the promyſe y ye made to hym/the whiche prayth  
you that ye wyll haue it in remembraunce Olyuer her  
ge his hoſteſſe/was more abaſſhed than euer he had ben  
and feynynge that he knewe well ynoughe what it wol  
de meane/wente fyrſt to his beddes heed / and founde y  
bogette that his hoſteſſe hadde tolde hym of/and founde  
the keye in the locke/and taſted it/and felte wel ynough  
that it was heuy / and bndyde it/and in lokynge in to it



he apperceyued that it was nothyng but golde / & good  
nobles of Englande.

**H**ow Olyuer founde grete synaunces / seruauntes  
and clothynges / and how he was broughte in to the  
kynges courte with grete reuerence of the knyghtes  
that had taken hym. Capitulo.

xxx.



Oly.

G.ii.



Olyuer that foude hymselfe all alone in his  
chambre / sat hym downe / for the .xx. knygh-  
ts hadde taken leue of hym / and were go-  
ne for to dysarme them / to be at the feest / &  
Teynge that he had tyme ynoughe / begane  
for to tell his moneye / and founde that there was. v. M.  
nobles / wherfore he thanked god and the noble knyght  
that had / had soo good remembraunce on hym. Whyles  
that he put bp his golde in to his bouigette / entred in to  
þe chambre fyue gentyll squyers clothed in whyte satyn  
& .x. barlets clothed in whyte clothe / whiche salued hym  
saynge. My lord / your mayster stewart hathe ben he-  
re this after none / and hathe gyuen eche of vs a gowne  
and tolde vs that it was your lyucray / and that ye shold  
reteyne vs in your scruyte / and therfore we come towar-  
de you to knowe and it be y<sup>ur</sup> wyll / for there is none of  
vs but that he hathe good mayster / for some be the Erle  
of Flaundres men / and the other the dukes of Somers  
set And thus eche of vs hath good maysters / but they ha-  
ue as many seruauntes as theym nede the. And for the  
balpauitnesse that we haue lene in you / we become your  
seruauntes yf it be your pleasure. Olyuer answered the  
and sayd. My frendes of your grace ye saye more good  
of me than I haue deserued. And as I vnderstode eche  
of you hathe a good mayster / and better than I am / but  
and it be your wyll I reteyne you all. And to morowe  
syth that ye be men of knowlege I shall enquerre of your  
estate / and thenne to eche of you I shall gyue suche esta-  
te as to you apperteyneth. One of þe seruauntes sayd to  
hym. My lord / your mayster stewart hathe ordeyned  
me your palfreyere / therfore ye shall tell me yf it please  
you what I shall do with your horses. For I haue fyue

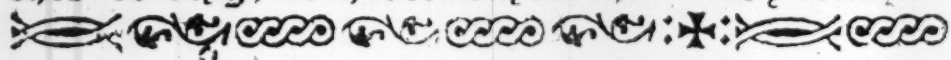
good courlers / & two lytell hobyres ryght fayre / of whiche he hadde me take good heed. And bycause that it is ferre to the courte I thynke ye wyll not go on fote there fore yf it please you ye shal tell me whiche of your hores ye wyll haue / and what harneys I shall put vpon hym whether that of beluet crymosyn / or that of beten golde & yf that it please you that your four pages shal come towarde you. Olyuer was moche abashed / and made the sygne of the crosse / and sayd to hym. My frende go in goddes name / & saddle one of the two lytell hobyres whiche thou louest best / and put on hym the harness of beten golde / and make y pages come with two torches for to lyght me in to the courte. And the Olyuer commaunded for to vndo the fardell / and so it was done. And founde thre sortes of clotynge for hym / of the same colours y he hadde wore durynge the tozneyment / that is to wyte / blacke / rede / and whyte. The hosen were of scarlet / the gownes of beluet / the doublettes of blacke damaske figured / and the hatte of blacke / vpon the whiche was a ryght gentyll and ryche ouche of stones ryght curpoussly wrought / & there was in it an e / & an o / togyder. Wherfore he began for to kysse it / and sayd alowe. Fayre fader god yf that thou wylte extende soo moche thy grace on me / that my fortune were suche that Olyuer & Helayn myght come so nere togyder as these two lettres / I sholde be moche beholden to thanke thy grete maieste. In y same wordes Olyuer clothed hym / and founde that his clothynge were so well made for hym / that there coude none amende them. He was not so sone clothed but that his hore was redy abydynge hym at the doore / and his four pages. And within shorte tyme after y knyghtes that had brought hym theder / came for to fetch hym /

Oly.

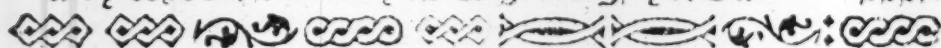
G. iij.



and tolde hym that it was hyghe tyme to goo in to the  
courte. They they mounted on horsbacke/and the to:  
thes were lyghted that conduyted them in to y courte.



How Dlyuer came in to the courte of the ryght no  
ble kynge of Englande/ where as he was receyued of  
all y lordes/and ladyes w grete Joye. Ca. xxxi.





When Olyuer was afore the gate of þe palays  
he began for to smyte his hors with þe spoz  
res / þe whiche made lepes without nōbre  
and dyde all that his mayster wolde haue hy  
do / he made fyre to sprynge out of the pay  
ment in suche haboundaunce þe euery body toke out at  
þe wyndowes to beholde hym / and in suche estate he came  
to the place where it was tyme to alyght. And bycause þe  
he was so semely a knyght / there was grete preece to be  
holde hym. There was so huge a nomibre of folke that  
with grete payne he myghte descende / and passe forth /  
The rydynge came to the kynge / and to the other pry  
ces that theder were comen / how þe whyte knyght was  
comen / and mounted by the steyres / and sayd that and  
his beaute were lost / that in all the worlde it myghte not  
be recouered / and in lyke wyse these rydynge were pro  
nounced to the ladyes / the whiche demaunded what ma  
ner a man he was / and it was tolde them that he was  
a heed of werke / and that there was neuer sene a moze fay  
rer knyght. And durynge these wordes he entred in to þe  
halle where as all the lordes were / and salued the kynge  
The whiche by semblaunt made hym ryght grete chere  
and honour / and so dyde all the other lordes / the whiche  
sholdred one another for to se hym / for his excellent be  
aute. There was many that at his comynge wolde that  
he hadde ben a thousande myle thens / and in especyall  
they that hadde done beste nexte hym dyde curse hym in  
theyr courage / but his physnamye and maneres were  
so swete / that he sholde haue ben ryghte cursed þe wolde  
haue done hym ony harme. So as he was fested on eue  
ry syde / þe ryght fayr and good Helayne accompanied  
with dyuers grete lordes and ladyes came in to the hall

Oly.

G.iii.

apparaylled & aourned so rychely / that her habyllemens  
tes were worthe a realme / for there was neuer sene the  
pareylles or lyke. Her beaute enlumyned the palays / the  
whiche excelled all natures werke. And thynke not that  
that Helayne for whome Troye receyued soo many ad  
uersytes passed this. But bycause that comparysons be  
hernous / and noysous I holde my peas in retornynge  
to my purpose. The fayre Helayne of Englande sernge  
the thought of her lord and fader set her vpon her knez  
es / and made to hym reuerence and honoure as it apper  
teyned. The kynge her fader toke her by the hande and  
made her for to aryse / in saynge that she was ryght well  
come. And thenne she was salued of all the other knygh  
tes & lordes / vnto whome she rendred echone theyr salu  
te after theyr qualyte / as she coude do full well. Thenne  
was Olyuer brought afore her / the whiche knewe hym  
as sone as she sawe hym. For he was easy for to knowe  
amongest them all. Wherfore she behelde hym voluntar  
ryly / and it was force to the knyghtes and squyres for  
to withdraue them aparte / for to make place to the la  
dies and gentyllwomen / to the ende that they myght se  
hym the better at theyr eases. And there was but fewe  
of them that were for to marie / but that they thoughte  
within theymselfe / and wolde that Olyuer had conquere  
d them by force of armes / as well as he hadde done þ  
fayre Helayne.



How in secrete the pryce was ordeyned for Olyuer  
by the Iuges commysed / and the counsayll of the ky  
ge approued for to aduertise Olyuer. Capi. xxxij.





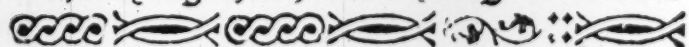


**T**ytell whyle after these thynges deuysed/  
 the tables were spredde / and incontynente  
 as all thyng was redy þæt trompettes blew  
 for water to wasshe theyr handes. And then  
 the kyng and his doughter wasshed / and all  
 the other lordes in generall. And the kyng made to en  
 quere of Olyuer / of his kyne / and what he was / and of  
 what marches / to the ende that þæt honour were done to  
 hym after his estate. He answered to them that demaun  
 ded hym that he was a pooze knyght of Spayne / & not  
 of a hye place. There was not one neyther the kyng nor  
 the other / but that men semed well by his physnamye /  
 that he was of a good house / and that also without grea  
 te puyssaunce he coude not haue furnysshed the habylle  
 mentes that they had sene hym haue durynge the feest /  
 Whan tyme was the kyng satte hym doun at the tas

ble/and with hym all the grete lordes and ladyes/ reser-  
ued Helayne/ that was sette vp on hye in the myddes of  
a table that was eleuate/ to the ende that she myght be se-  
ne of all theym in the halle. At the ryght syde were the  
prynces Judges set at the same table/ and on the other sy-  
de were the .x. pryncesses at the same table. Olyuer wol-  
de not sytten downe at the kynges stable. Notwithstans-  
dyng he was prayed so moche / and commaunded that  
it was force for hym to obeye. There was other tables  
without nombre where as the other knyghtes and lady-  
es were sette. Who that wolde deuylse to you the seruyce  
and the mysteryes that was there / it sholde be to longe  
to recoûte it. There was no mete that replenysshed the  
so sone/ as to beholde the excellent Helayne/ she was the  
repose of the wery/ and the couragynge of the balyaunt  
And there was not one but that they thought that god  
hadde made her for to serue his hyghe myght. This  
feest dured so longe tyll that it was tyme to vnserue / &  
there was none of them all that thought other thyng /  
saue to make good chere / and also they were not requy-  
red otherwyle. The tables taken awaye & graces gyue  
to our lord of his goodnes / the daunces began/ and in-  
contynent the .x. prynces/ and the .x. pryncesses withdres-  
we them a parte in to a lytel chambze for to knowe who  
had done best/ and they were in grete plete. The one hel-  
de with the kynges sone of Scotlande / and the other w<sup>th</sup>  
the erle of Flaundres/ & the other with the good duke of  
Somerset. But the moost parte helde with Olyuer. In  
suche wyle that there was none of theym but that they  
gaue theyr boyce to Olyuer/ & whan the kynge thought  
that they myght well haue done / he habandonned the  
daunces and came towarde them/ & demaunded theym

What thyng that they had done. One of theym kneled  
downe & sayd. Our souerayne lord ye haue of your go  
de grace commysed vs for to saye truly the trouthe. Als  
so we haue made our othe that we shall not take regar  
de to the magnyfycence of the lygnage nor lordshyppe/  
And vs semeth that the best doer of all this assemble ha  
the ben Olyuer not for one daye alonely but for all the  
thre dayes / & we sawe neuer knyght do suche dedes of  
armes as he hath done therfore we aduertise you ther  
of for to do therewith your good pleasure. The kynge an  
swered and sayd. My fayre colyns / and my good fren  
des and you my fayre ladies here presente I here well  
ynoughe what ye haue sayd / and knoweth that it shol  
de be agaynst reason to take y<sup>e</sup> pryce from hym y<sup>e</sup> hathe  
deseruyd it. And truly who had axed me myn aduise  
wolde haue sayd the same that ye haue tolde me but fo  
all that ye ought to knowe that this is not a lytell thyng  
For he that wynneth the pryce wynneth my daughter  
and consequently all my realme for to be kynge ouer you  
al after my decease. And bycause that ye gyue the pryce  
to a straunger vnknown of vs all I wolde vnder cor  
reccon soo it that seme you good y<sup>e</sup> he were aduertysed  
of this thyng by one of you / and how the pryce shall be  
gyuen to hym. And he the whiche shall aduertise hym  
maye saye also to hym that I am delybered for to make  
vnto hym a request that is for to knowe that he were co  
tente for to abyde a yere in my court afoze that my fay  
re daughter Helayne be gyuen vnto hym / for to knowe  
his mures and condycions. And also I shall promys  
hym by the fayth that I owe to knyghthode that duryn  
ge that tyme I shall not mary her / & yf that he be a man  
worthy her / & that I knowe none other thyng thā I do



tyll this present tyme / that whiche he hathe wonne shall  
not be taken from hym. And also I shall put in doubte  
ryght grete lordes that be here / and yf that I gaue her  
to hym in theyr presence / they myght cōspyre some euyl  
agaynst his persone / wherby ryght grete inconuenien-  
tes myght come to hym / and there is myn aduysle. Whā  
the kynge hadde fynysshed his wordes / they withdrew  
themsel e a parte. And founde in counsayll that the kyn-  
ge had sayd ryght well / and sayd it sholde be wel done to  
knowe Olyuers wyll / afore that the request were made  
on hyghe. Bycause that it sholde be shame to the kynge  
yf it were not vnto hym accorded. Thus there is no thyn-  
ge but good / and the kynge hathe no wronge to knowe  
afore the loue. 

¶ Now the kynge of Englande came towarde his fay-  
re doughter / for to demaunde her to whome her se-  
med that the pryce ought to be gyuen / and of her an-  
swers. Capitulo. xxxiij.



He of the prynces was ordeyned to speke  
to Olyuer / wherfore he came in to the hall  
where as y ladyes were / and toke Olyuer  
aparte / and sayd to hy all that ye haue her  
de afore. Olyuer had alwaye doubte of y  
thyng / by cause of the grete multytude of lordes that  
were there / to whome hy thought they wolde soner ap-  
plye than to hym / & thought as well that yf he were not  
contente that it sholde be force to hym / wherfore he an-  
swered to the prynce. My lord ye mocke with me for I



haue not deserued the honour that ye do to me / but and  
 ye speke in sadnesse / and that it please the kynge to ma-  
 ke to me a request / as I here you saye. I tell you that it  
 is no prayer / but his commaundement to the whiche I  
 wyll not dysobeye / and sayd no more / nor the lorde also  
 but retozned towarde the kȳge / and aduertysed hym of  
 that whiche he hadde founden in Olyuer / and sayd that  
 he founde neuer a more dyscreter mā / nor more worthy  
 and that he was dygne of moche good. And the Kynge  
 was ryght Joyous of that reporte / and began for to tell  
 in what maner he wolde that þe pryce were gyuen / and  
 who sholde bere it / and tolde them that he wolde make  
 them haue knowlege / the houre that the pryce sholde be  
 gyuen. And then he departed and came to the daunces

where as he founde yrs doughter / y<sup>e</sup> whiche he toke by  
the hāde / and sayd to her. My fayre doughter ye muste  
tell me to whiche of these lordes that ye haue sene here /  
ye haue best wyll to / & whiche hathe done beste by your  
aduyse. My lord my fader I haue no more wyll to one  
thā to an other. Ye be my fader reason it is that I obey  
to you / for your pleasure is myne / and also me thynketh  
that they haue all done so well that none can amende it /  
Then the kynge demaunded her yf that she wolde be as  
well cōtente yf Olyuer hadde the pryce / as yf a gretter  
lord had it. She answered / it is a fayre thynge to do ry  
ghte to euerie body. Ye be wyse and knoweth what ye ha  
ue to do. The kyng whiche was dyscrete sente for y<sup>e</sup> pry  
ce / y<sup>e</sup> whiche was brought in the maner that foloweth.

**H**ow the pryce of the toyrneyment was brought to  
Olyuer by dyuers lordes and ladyes / and what it  
was. Capitulo. xxxiii.







Here came fyrste many torches / and offycers  
for to make place. After came a kynge of ar-  
mes richely clothed holdyng on hyghe with  
bothe his hādes a grete and massylle cheyne  
of golde / charged & entyched with p̄cyous  
stones. After hym came two fayre ladies / clothed in ly-  
ke habyllementes / the whiche became them so well that  
it was a pleasaūt syght to beholde them. These ladies  
were accompanyed with four knyghtes clothed in lyke  
wyle / and eche of the ladies were on the ryght hande of  
two knyghtes. And in suche estate they came afoze ȳ k̄y-  
ges persone / to whome they dyde the reuerence as it ap-  
perteyned. And thē they demaunded hym yf it were his  
good pleasure that the pryce were ḡuen. And he answe-  
red ye. Then they began to walke aboute the halle / and  
came to the place where as Olyuer was hydde amonge  
the p̄ce. To whome the kynge of armes sayd that he  
sholde come forth / and that it was to hym that they wol-  
de speke / and after that he was comen forth the kynge of  
armes sayd to hym in this wyle. Carbūcle and gemme  
of all prowesse and hardynesse / the k̄yge our souerayne  
lorde / and the ladies of this company / by the grete and  
hyghe faytes of armes that in you hath bē shewed / and  
comen to theyr knowlege / dothe presente to you this no-  
ble cheyne / in ḡyunge you the pryce of ȳ thre dayes w̄  
tryumphe and gloze / aboue al them that theder haue  
ben comen / or founde them there. I make you no mē-  
s̄on of my ryght redoubted maystresse / and lady Helayne  
bycause that the kynge my souerayne lorde make ȳ to  
you a request / that is that the ryght that ye can demā-  
de of her by the crye that was publysshed by his cōmaun-  
dement / that it wyll please you for to be cōtente & for to

dyfferre and abyde vntyl a yere be passed. And he dothe  
promyse you that enduryng that whyle / my lady Helay  
ne his doughter shall not be maryed / and then he shall  
do so moche towarde you that ye shall be well contente /  
For she shall be appareylled for you / euen as she sholde  
be at this presente tyme / for he wolde not take fro you  
for no thyng / that the whiche ye haue deserued. Oliuer  
with a symple voyce all rubycūde answered that he had  
not deserued the honour that they presented hym / but  
syth that it was the kynges good pleasure / and the loz  
des and ladyes / he sholde be a grete sole / and mysprous  
de to refuse it. As for the surplus touchyng the kynges  
requestes / he answered that his requestes were cōmaū  
dementes / in praynge yf that he had wonne ony thyng  
that it sholde not be taken from hym. For he was well  
in wyll for to take it / yf it fell to hym. This notwithstanding  
he was well contente that the kynges wyll were  
accomplished / and to abyde a yere. And thanked the  
kyng / and the ladyes that had made hym that present.  
And toke the chayne of golde and put it aboute his neck  
And then they demaūded hym his name / and surname  
he made hymself Olyuer / but he sayd that his surname  
myght not be knowen at that present tyme. And bycaus  
se that the herāude coude not tell how to gyue his name  
in knowlege that the pryce was gyuen to / he beganne  
for to crye in this maner wyse To this blacke / rede / and  
whyte knyght / the floure of chyualrye / that by force of  
armes hathe obteyned the laste tryumphe of the tozney  
ment hathe ben delyuered the pryce.



How Olyuer requyred þ kyng of Englande that  
 he wolde retere hym of his courte / & that he myght  
 keue afore his doughter / the whiche he bitred hym.  
 afore all his barons. Capitulo. rrrb.



Then was Olyuer ledde afore the kyng / & whiche  
 he thanked hūbly of the grete honour that  
 Oly. H. J.



he had done to hym without deseruyng/and besought  
hym for to haue alwaye memoꝛye of hym/and of his pro  
myse that he had made hym/and to reteyne hym of his  
courte. The kyge answered in saynge that he wolde do  
it with ryght a good wyll/ & that suche estate as he wol  
de demaunde/ sholde be delyuered hym/and with that  
that he sholde not fere hym/ but that he wolde haue me  
moꝛye of hym/ & that bycause of the pryce that was his  
he sholde lese nothyng. Syr sayd Olyuer I can not tel  
you how ye vnderstande it/ truly I can nothyng lese/  
of what wherof I had neuer nothyng/ but I holde you  
for so valyaunt that ye wyll not go agarnst your worde  
ye gyue me for to chese and take suche estate as shal plea  
se me/ wherfore I thanke you. ¶ And therfore I praye  
you that ye wyll be cōtente that I be squire keruer afo  
re my lady your doughter. And the kyng answered in  
refusynge hym/and sayd that his doughter was not ac  
customed for to be serued of a knyght. Notwithstandyn  
ge he requyzed and prayed so moche that the kyng was  
cōtente that his wyll were fulfyllled. Neuerthelesse that  
he was worthy to haue had a gretter estate than that/  
Then he made hym to ryse and toke hym by the hāde/ &  
ledde hym towarde his doughter/and then commaunds  
ded her that she sholde kysse hym/ because that hym ses  
med that Olyuer had well deserued it/ and at the leest  
yf that he had no moze honour but that for to content hys  
the better. The fayre Helayne in accomplysshynge the  
wyll of the kyng her fader/ toke Olyuer by y<sup>e</sup> hande y<sup>e</sup>  
was alre dy on his knee/and kysed hym in touchynge her  
mouthe agarnst his. This kysse thugh perced y<sup>e</sup> herte  
of Olyuer and his entaylles/and entred and lodged in  
the moost secretest place of his herte/and neuer after des

parted that done she made Olyuer to aryse the whiche  
thanked her. After the daunces were begonne agayne/  
and endured a grete space of tyme / and after came the  
wyne and spryes / and whā euery body had dronke and  
that it was oure for to go to bedde / the grete prynces &  
lordes toke leue of the kynge / and of the fayre Helayne /  
for to retozne on the morowe in to theyr countrees / and  
thanked the kynge of the grete chere and honour that he  
had done to them in his courte. The kynge prayed hym  
that they wolde yet abyde a daye or twayne. But they  
wolde not abyde but badde hym adew. And whan it cas  
me that the kynges sone of Scotlande toke his leue of y  
fayre Helayne / he sayd to her alowe as in reprochyng / y  
he was ryght Joyous that she was soo well assygned.  
Helayne that was not folysh / vnderstode well that all  
that he hadde sayd / proceeded of enuye / wherfoze she held  
de her styll and sayd nothyng / but toke leue of hym & of  
all the other / the whiche wente in to theyr lodgynges &  
on the morowe departed. The kynge Maquemoz of Ir  
lande / and another that was his neyghbour for ony pra  
yer that the kynge dyde make / wolde not come to y feest  
but all euyl contente were departed / without takynge  
leue / for the dyspleasure that they had of the deche of the  
kynge of Irlande theyr frende / and that the kynge had  
made therof so lytell accounte. And affermed & promys  
sed the one to the other that yf it were possyble for them  
whan they were comen in to theyr countree / that the kyn  
ge of Englande sholde repent hym to late.

**C**How Olyuer was reteyned of the Kynges courte  
and kerued afoze his doughter / and made his othe.

Capitulo.

Dix.

xxxvi.

D.ii.



Olyuer hadde good nyght to the kynge and to his fayre doughter Helayne / and consequentlye to all the other. And he was conueyed to his lodges / by dyuers gentylmen of the kynges courte / that all redy had grete volente for to be acquaynted with hy. Olyuer comen into his lodges / made theym for to drynke / and then he thanked them for y<sup>e</sup> trauayll y<sup>e</sup> they had taken for hym / & sayd to them. My lordes I wyll be from hensforth your seruaunt / broder / and selowe. And yf there be ony thyng that I may do for you / there is none of you but that ye shall fynde me redy at nede. Then they all departed /

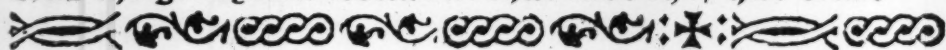


saue one gentyll squire / the whiche Olyuer receyved w  
hym / for to lye with hym / & also to the ende that he shol  
de haue the more acquaintaunce with the lordes of the  
courte. The nyght passed and the daye came. And whā  
it was tyme. Olyuer aroise and clothed hym in newe ro  
bes / that he had made make all the nyght. And was led  
to the courte by his squire / and founde the kynge y<sup>e</sup> was  
alredy at the masse / the whiche synysshed / the kynge co  
maunded that Olyuer sholde be ledde towarde his fyrst  
knyght chamberlayne / the whiche he had ordeyned for  
to speke to hym. Whā Olyuer was comen / y<sup>e</sup> fyrst cham  
berlayne sayd to hym Olyuer my frende the kyng hath  
ordeyned me for to receyue your othe / and that I gyue  
to you retynue of .xx. horses. And yf it be your pleasure  
for to serue my lady his daughter as ye haue requyred /  
as well ye may do it / as yf ye were of lesse estate. Olyuer  
thanked the kynge / and made his othe. And as he y<sup>e</sup> whi  
che thoughte neuer tyme ynoughe for to se her that had  
gyuen hym that gracypous kysse / requyred that for that  
daye he myght kerue afoze her / and so he was ledde into  
her chambze / where as Helapns table was spredde / the  
whiche made no longe taryenge but came. Whan Oly  
uer sawe her / he gaue her good morow / And she ren  
dred hym his salute ryghte curteysly / and behelde hym  
gladly. And then she sat her downe at the table. Where  
as Olyuer began for to kerue afoze her. And in castynge  
vp her eyen demaunded hym yf that it was his wyl for  
to kerue afoze her. Olyuer answered / madame it is my  
pleasure for to do you all the serupce that I can / so that  
it tozne you not to dyspleasure. Olyuer my frende sayd  
she nay / but I thanke you how well y<sup>e</sup> I had wolde that  
ye had deposed you of this offyce / but syth y<sup>e</sup> it is youre

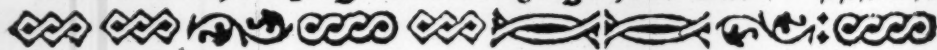
Oly.

H.iii.

Wyll/it is well myne. So Olyuer kerued afore his fayr  
maystres all alor ge the dyner/but it was not withoute  
foryson of regarjes and lokes. Whan the table was by/  
he was a lytell whyle with the ladyes/and then he wen  
te towarde the kynge/to whome they had tolde that O  
lyuer dyde serue at his doughters dyner/ & sayd that he  
was the gentyllest seruaunt that euer they had sene.



**H**ow Olyuer was surprysed of the loue of Helayne  
and cutte his fyngre in seruyng her. Ca. xxxvij.



**T**hese thynges dyde passe/and Olyuer was a  
grete whyle in þ courtte so well beloued that  
all that knewe hþ sayd good of hym. The kþ  
ge hymselfe coude not prayse hym ynoughe/  
& sayd often that Olyuer was bothe fayre &  
good/sayng that he and his doughter were wel serued  
The fayre Helayne in lyke wyse seyng the graces and  
beautees that god and nature had endowded that yonge  
knyght with/dyde prayse hym strongly in her herte/but  
she made no semblaunt for doubte of some folke. For ye  
knowe well ynoughe that they say oftener the euill than  
the good/for all that whā they demaunded her/she sayd  
that she sawe nothyng in hþ but all good /and that he  
was a ryght gracyous knyght / & in suche estate he had  
put hym in the grace of all them that knewe hym. And  
in lyke wyse at þ begynnynge had ben cōspyrred dyuers  
enuyes agaynst his persone/but by the grete wysdoome  
& doulcenesse that remayned in hym/he had subducd &  
ouercome his euyl wyllers/in suche wyse that every bo

By loured hym. Also none can not recorde to you þ newe  
thynges that were begonne / enterprysed / and achened  
by hym / as well Justynge as other dysperytes and playes  
Ye haue well herde how Olyuer had receyued a kyssse of  
his excellent maystresse / and I haue also tolde you that  
he kepte it so well / that he lost it not whan he wolde / for  
loue in a shorte space had defaced his Joye and lyfse / &  
with that helde hym so streyte in his bondes that he cou  
de not ete nor drynke / slepe nor rest in bedde / and he was  
not at his ease nor peas the houre that he hadde lost the  
syght of his lady and maystresse. And was not in no plas  
ce but that hym thought that he sawe the representacyō  
of his excellent lady afore his eyen. In suche estate he  
was a space of tyme / and in suche wyse he aduynchylled /  
hym that he became in suche estate that he cared no mo  
re of noo good dede. Chystrye sayth that on a tyme as  
he kerued afore his maystres at the table as he that was  
not mayster ouer hymselfe began to beholde her / and in  
beholdynge her he made many syghes of loue that pro  
ceded from his herte. Then the fayre Helayne appercey  
ued that he thought strongly vpon her / and she had no  
thynge kerued afore her for to ete. For Olyuer had gyue  
her none / wherfore she sayd by dyuers tymes. Olyuer  
my frende I wolde ete gladly yf ye gaue me wherof O  
lyuer that thought on other thynges herde her not at þ  
fyrst tyme. And whan his vnderstandynge was comen  
agayn / all ashamed he began for to serue / and as he that  
had no thought on that whiche he dyde / cut his fyngre  
all moost of. Wherfore he departed from thens inconty  
nent / and gaue aniother to serue. Helayne apperceyyn  
ge these thynges knewe & apperceyued clerely þ thought  
of Olyuer / wherof she was nothyng gladde / whan she





bedde / in complaynyng hym so pytcouſly / that it was  
grete pyte for to here. He curſed the god of loue that had  
wounded hym ſo profoundly with his ſhambyng darte  
and bounde hym in his bandes ſoo vyolently / wherfore  
he ſawe appertely that he muſt hedeſ deye / for he abode  
none allegaunce / nor merce of his anglyſſhouſ ma  
ladye. Ha kynge of Englāde ſayd Olyuer yf thy worde  
had ben veritable / as a kynges ought to be / I had not  
fallen in this extremyte that I am nowe in. Thus as ye  
haue herde demeaned Olyuer his ſorowe by longe ſpa  
ce of tyme / and contynued ſo in that he was greuouſly  
ſycke / and layde hym downe in his naked bedde. Wher  
of the Kyng and all they of the courte were ryghte dyſ  
pleaſant. And the kyng byſyted hym ryght famylyer  
ly / and made hym to be ſumptuouſly kepte / and taken  
heede to of his phyſcyons. But aboue all them that we  
re dolaunt / the noble Helayne paſſed / notwithstandinge  
ſhe made no ſemblaunt outwarde. And on a tyme as y  
phyſcyens came to her / as it is theyr cuſtome for to vi  
ſyte prynces and pryncelles / ſhe demaunded them how  
Olyuer dyde / and yf that he amended not. They anſwe  
red naye / and ſayd that they had grete doubte of his lyfe  
Whan Helayne herde theſe tydyngeſ ſhe was ſo dolent  
that ſhe myght ſcarſely ſuſteyne herſelfe. The ſhe with  
drew her in to her garderobe / and gaue them to vnder  
ſtande that ſhe was ſycke / & therfore ſhe layde her downe  
on her bedde / & made her to be couered / for to couer  
the better her dole. And whan the ladyes were boyded /  
ſhe began to ſaye with a ſofte voyce. O god almyghtye  
creatour of heuen and erthe / the whiche after thy pleaſu  
re dyſpoſeth all erthely thynges. And thou ryght doulce  
quene of heuen / lady of the worlde / and empreſſe of helle

Oly.

I. i.

Also truly as thou bare. ix. monthes in thy brest, & flanks  
kes the betray sope of god thyn espouse / and that concey  
ued hym a byrgyn / and delyuered hym a byrgyn / and y  
arte aduocate and refuge of all desolate creatures I bes  
seche the that thou wylte counsayll me vnhappy and vn  
fortuned woman. O glorious byrgyn Marye wherfore  
hathe thy blessyd sone gyuen me soo moche beaute for to  
be cause of the dethe of the moost fayrest / and moost va  
lyauntest knyght that euer was sene / the whiche am in  
dygne of this grace. Wherfore I beseeche the that thou  
kepe this gentyll knyght / the whiche hathe not mysdo  
ne me in no maner of the worlde / wherby I sholde put  
hym in this ryght daungerous peryll / and that thou dys  
deyne not for to tell me myn honour saued / how that I  
myght gve hym allegeaunce of his maladye. Whyles  
that she complayned so to god and to our lady / a lyghte  
sompne toke her / wherthughe she was constrayned to  
slepe. In her slepe her semed that our lady spake to her  
and sayd. Velayne my sone & I haue herde thy request  
The knyght for whome thou hast prayed is sycke to the  
dethe. And bycause that thou arte cause of his maladye /  
thou must be cause also of his guarysshyge and helthe /  
go towarde thy fader and demaunde hym lycence for to  
go se hym / & whan thou shalte be there / put hym in me  
morye that the yeres ende approcheth nere / & that thou  
shalte haue so good mynde on hym / that it shall suffyse  
hym. Velayne a waked ryght Joyous of her byfyd / and  
in thankynge god and our lady arose / and wente towar  
de her fader / the whiche gaue her leue to go bysyte Oly  
uer / and so she wente thider with a lytell company. And  
whan she was entred in to the chambze / she approached  
towards the bedde where as Olyuer was / that alredye



had lost his knowlege / and with the tere in her eyen nammed hym her frende / in demaundyng hym how he dyde. Olyuer knewe the voyce of his maysteresse / and lyfte vp his eyen in makynge a lytell syghe anguysshous / for other thynge coude he not answer. Helayne apperceyued that he had but lytell knowlege / wherfore she approached more nerer / and sayd with a lowe voyce. Alas my frende what lacke ye / wyll ye leue me a wydowe / do ye not knowe y<sup>e</sup> the ende of the twelue monthe approacheth. By my trouthe my frende your maladye doth greue me so sore that ye can not byleue it / wherfore I pray you that ye wyll thynke for to guarryshe you / and yf there be any thynge that I can do for you / tell it me. And euē so god helpe me myn honoure salued / I knowe no mā for whome I wolde do more than for you. ✠

How Olyuer after that the fayre Helayne had vlysted hym came to the courte / and of the messenger of the Kynges of Irland / sente to the Kyng of Englande / for to desye hym of fyre and blode.

Capitulo.

xxxix.

**A**S Olyuer herde y<sup>e</sup> swete voyce of his maysteresse that recomforted hym so swetely / he forced hym for to speke / and with grete payne thanked her / and with payne myght he abyeyne hym from saynge that she was cause of his dethe / and as she that loued hym / sayd to hym / Fayre syr thynke for to ware hole / and come to y<sup>e</sup> courte / For vpon my fayth ye shall be ryght welcome. Then she

Oly.

J.ii.



toke leue of hym and returned / and it was neuer a daye  
 after / but that she shente for to knowe how he dyde / and  
 with that she sente hym ryght largely of her wyres / and  
 dyde so moche that within shorte tyme he was stronge  
 ynoughe for to promayne hym aboute his chambze / as  
 he that had had a good phylsycyen in his maladye. And it  
 was not longe after that he wente in to the courte / and  
 whan he felte hymselfe that he was entyely hole / he ser-  
 ued his maystres as he had done before. The whiche ma-  
 de hym greter there than she was accustomed to do. In  
 suche wyse y Olyuer was more beauteuous than euer  
 he had be afore. Helayne that apperceyued that Olyuer  
 was out of daunger / put hym in remembraunce of the  
 regrettes and complayntes that she had made for hym  
 durynge his maladye / wherof Olyuer had his heed dy-  
 uers tymes sore troubled. ¶ It happened vpon a whytz

souerayne / on the whiche daye he helde open courte. And  
 there was the moost parte of the lordes of Englande as-  
 sembled / euen so as he was at dyner / and his daughter  
 sette besyde hym / came a messenger afore the table / the  
 whiche began for to saye. That same god all puyssaunt /  
 that gouerneth all thynges / gyue honoure and gloire &  
 good aduenture to the hyghe and puyssaunt prynces / &  
 my souerayne lordes the seuen kynges of Irlande / by  
 whome I am sente hether / and that he confounde the  
 crowne of Englande / the whiche is not worthy to be na-  
 med kynge. Now hearken tyraunt what I haue in char-  
 ge for to saye to the by the kynges of Irlande. They sen-  
 de the worde by me / and desyeth the of fyre and bloode /  
 and that they wyll depose the of thy realme / as he that is  
 not worthy for to holde it. Some of them hathe ben co-  
 men to thy courte for to knowe more playnly thy gouer-  
 nyng / wher as they haue apperceyued thy grete crude-  
 lye and tyrannye / and howe that by thy synguler and  
 dampnable wyll / hathe accomplyshed thy tyrannye on  
 colde bloode withouten any cause reasonable / wherfore  
 thou arte cause of the effusyon of blode humayne / and of  
 the semblable crysten. And therfore take heede to that  
 whiche thou hast to do. For I tell the that they ben alre-  
 dy descended on thy grounde / and shall do suche Justy-  
 ce on the as apperteyneth.

How Olyuer after that the messenger hadde fynyl-  
 shed his wordes / requyred the kynge of Englande for  
 to gyue hym men of armes / and that he wolde goo  
 agaynst them / the whiche was vttered vpo hym with  
 a good wyll. Capitulo.

Oly.

I.iii.

xl.

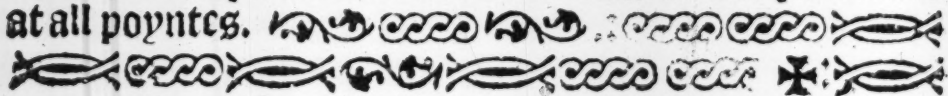




**E**nysshed the wordes of the messenger / the  
 kynge enclyned his heed / and sone after lyfte  
 it vp agayne / and began to rolle his eyen / &  
 to bende his browes in suche wyse that here  
 sembled a man extracte oute of his mynde /  
 Whan the messenger sawe the kynge make suche chere /  
 he wolde with a good wyll haue ben in his moders bely.  
 There was none that answered / for the courte at that  
 tyme was so troubled that it was grete meruayll to bes  
 holde it / for all they in the halle kepte scyence / and sayd  
 neuer a worde. Whan the valyaunt Olyuer sawe all the  
 companye so sore abasched for so lytel a thyng / as hym  
 semed / he sette hymselfe on his knees befoze the kynges

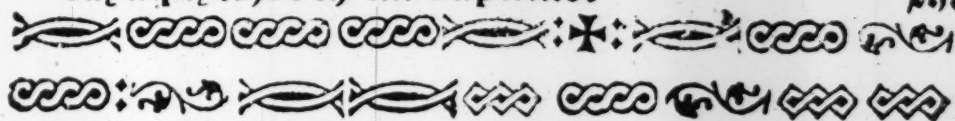
persone/and all ashamed beganne for to speke and sayd  
Kyght myghtye Emperour & redoubted Syr. I beseeche  
you that your ryall mayeste be not dysmayed agaynste  
me/yf that I auauce me to speke soner than I oughte  
to do. Syr ye haue herde the iniuries that these captyfs  
kynges of Irlande hathe imposed on you by the saynge  
of the herauldes. And for bycause that I knowe you soo  
valyaunt and so puyssaunt / and with that that ye hadde  
leuer deye than it sholde abyde thus without bengynge  
you on your enemyes / that alreedy ben entred in to your  
realme / wherfore I supplie me in althumplyte that vns  
to me yonge man / not withstandynge that I am not dys  
gne / and that I haue ytell sene vnto this present tyme  
that ye wyll do me that honoure for to grue me a certay  
ne nombze of men of armes / suche as your good pleasur  
re shal be / and that ye shal fynde by the delyberacyon of  
your good counsayll / for to go agaynste these unhappy  
folke / that withoute cause wyl blurpe your lordshyppe.  
¶ The kyng answered vnto Olyuer and sayd. Olyuer  
I shall counsayll me on the request that ye make to me  
after dyner / and after I shall make you to knowe my  
wyll. And then he commaunded that the messaunger of  
the kynges of Irlande sholde be sette to dyner. And soo  
it was done. Whā the kyng was ryfen from the table /  
he assembled his counsayll. And then was g gyven an an  
swere to the messanger that he sholde saye to his mayes  
ters that they myght be well sure that the kyng doub  
ted they in but ytell / and that he hadde good wyll for to  
kepe his herytage / & that yf they myghte wyne it / that  
it sholde be theyres / but by the pleasure of god it sholde  
not happen so / and then they gaue some gyfte vnto the  
messaunger. And then the sayd messaunger departed and  
Oly.  
J.iii.

retorned towarde the kynges of Irlāde that alredy we  
re entred in to the Realme of Englande / to whome he tol  
de the answer that he had receyued. And then y kyng  
of Englande accorded to Olyuer his request for the gre  
te valyauntnesse y he had sene hym do afore tymes. And  
gaue to hym .x. thousande men of armes / the whiche co  
men he toke leue of the kyng / and the kyng gaue hym  
foure thousande nobles at his departynge / the whiche  
Olyuer toke in good thanke. But afore that he departed  
from the cyte he dystribued it vnto the pooze men of ar  
mes that had nede therof / and moze to / and he dyde soo  
moche that they spake of nothyng but of his grete larg  
esse / wherfore he gate the loue of euery body. And in y  
maner departed after that he had taken leue of his may  
stresse / the whiche commaunded hym vnto god. And he  
spedde hym so well on his Journeye that he came with  
in thre myle of his enemyes. And whan it came to theyr  
knowlege they repesed by theyr syege that they had layd  
de aboute a stronge place / and putte theym all vpon a  
playne in fayre ordenaunce redy to abyde bataylle. Oly  
uer in lyke wyse prayed and requyred all his men for to  
do well / in shewynge theym that they sholde haue moze  
honoure without comparyson / yf any good aduenture  
happened them / than yf the kyng were there in his per  
sone / and ech of them promysed to do his deuoyze. And  
in that good wyll they approached so nere theyr enemyes  
that they myght se them clerely / the whiche were foure  
agaynst one man. But they were not men of suche chap  
for the moost parte were comune men and euill armed  
at all poyntes.





How Olyuer after that he was departed from London in armes came afoze a towne that was besyged of the Irysshmen / and how he fought with them and baynquysshed them. Capitulo. xli.



**B**yght so as these two hoostes approached to gyder / ye myght haue herde suche a noyse that it was hydeous to here / and whan it came to the strokes gyuyng / ye sholde haue sene sheldes crouen / and helmes & hauberkes broke / stedes and knyghtes synnen downe / hedes and armes cut of / and many one pulled downe that neuer rose after. Olyuer wente thughe the batayll maulgre all his enemyes / and dyde suche dedes of armes that he made hym to

be knowen within a lytell stounde of euery body / wher  
foze they fledde afore hym and made hym waye. For all  
that he hytte he smote downe / none can not reherse vnto  
you the meruaylous strokes that he gaue / for bothe  
his frendes and his enemyes were all abashed to beholde  
them. He escryed as hye as he myght / yf the kynges  
of Irlande be here I shall make them crownes. One of  
the kynges of Irlande that was a valyaunt man tooke  
a grete spere in his hande and came towarde Olyuer /  
Olyuer that sawe hym come pulled a spere frome hym  
that was nexte hym / and smote his hors with the spoz  
res and mette togyder so strongly that it was not in the  
horses puyssaunce to susteyne them / wherfoze bothe fell  
to the erthe / but the kyng neuer arose after / for Olyuer  
had perced his hauberke and smyten hym to the herte /  
wherof it was grete domynage / for he was a valyaunte  
man. Then ye wolde haue sene Englysshmen and Iryss  
men renne to the socoute of theyr lordes and thire was  
slayne moche people on bothe sydes. Olyuer was on foze  
amongest his enemyes where as he smote on the ry  
ghte hande and of the lefte hande / and dyde suche dedes  
of armes that it was grete meruayll. His cuttyge swor  
de made his enemyes to flee afore hy. For all that mau  
gre them all he mounted on his hors / and then beganne  
the batayll moze fyers and moze aspre than it hadde ben  
of all the daye afore. And in that same bataylle / Olyuer  
with his propre handes toke two of the moost grettest  
kynges of Irlande. And then after that Olyuer with  
grete payne perced the hoost and dyde soo moche that in  
despyte of all his enemyes / he came vnto the chref stan  
darde of the Irysshmen / the whiche by force of armes  
he smote downe to the grounde / and with one stroke he

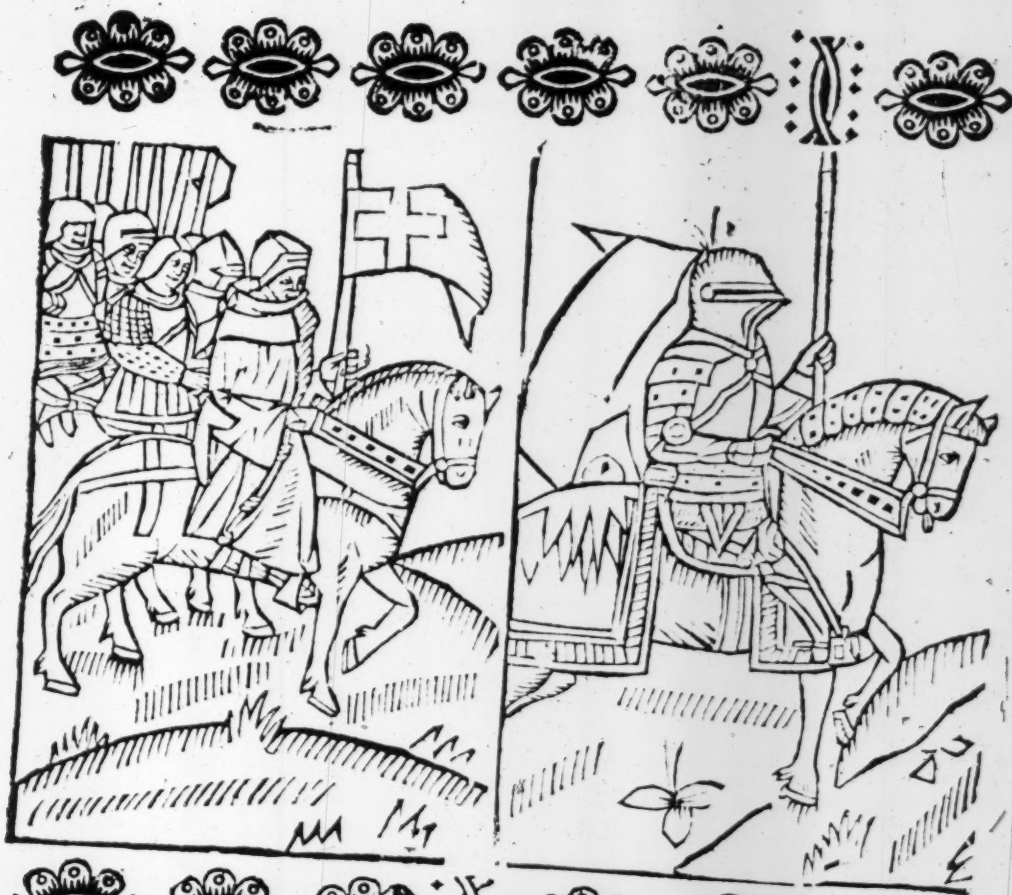
smote of his heed that bare the standarde / & so he deyed /  
Thenne ye sholde haue sene Irysshemen gretely abas-  
shed whā they sawe theyr chyfe standarde fall to þe erthe  
they toke grette payne for to rete it vp agayne / but they  
coude not. And fynally / by þe valyauntnesse of Olyuer  
and the courage that he gaue his men the Irysshemen  
were dyscomfyt / and so they fled. The chase endured  
more than two myle / and there was soo many slayne þat  
it was a pyteous syght for to beholde it / and euery body  
saued hym that myght. And than they came by nyghte  
and by dare to theyr shyppes / and in grette hast they en-  
tered in to theyr shyppes / and sayled in to Irlande where  
as they tolde theyr pyteous dyscomfytur that gaue gre-  
te dyscomforte vnto all theym of that countree. Olyuer  
made to sowne the retreyte / to the ende that none wente  
ferder forth / wherfore euery body retorned. And whan  
it came to repasse by the waye where as the batayll was  
done / and sawe the grette effusyon of blode / there was no  
ne of them but that theyr hertes abhorred. And Olyuer  
hymselfe had the teares in his eyen and sayd. O my blessed  
creatour I praye the that by thy grette mercye thou wyl-  
te pardon me the effusyon of blode of these crysten men.  
Neuerthelesse take that Olyuer sayd these wordes / yet  
he was ryght Ioyous and gladde of the vyctorye / and  
gaue louynges and thankynges to almyghty god / with  
a good herte. In that maner they came vnto the towne  
that hadde ben assyged afore of the Irysshemen / whe-  
re as they were receyued with grette tryumphe and Joy  
and with processyon of all the chyrches / and all the bel-  
les were rongen at his entrynge. And they gaue Oly-  
uer grette apptes / the whiche he gaue vnto his men / and  
in lyke wyse of all the butyn that he had wonne he wolde



haue nothyng. After he sente for the capytaynes of his  
armye / and whan they were comen he sayd to them / say  
re lordes ye knowe the vyctorye that god of his grace ha  
the gyuen to vs agaynst oure enemyes. And therfore it  
sholde be good to sygnefye these tydynges to the kynge  
our souerayn lord. Wherfore I praye you that the des  
de bodyes maye be nombred / to the ende that we maye  
wryte to hym the more certaynlye. It was tolde hym þ  
the kynge sholde haue shortlye tydynges / for it sholde be  
to longe to abyde the tellynge of them. But as it semed  
them they myght not fayle to wryte. xx. M. of theyr ene  
myes deed / without puttyng other nombre / and fewe  
of theyr men.

How Olyuer sente worde to the kynge of Englands  
de of theyr vyctorye. And of the enterpryse that Oly  
uer made to go in to Irland. Capitulo. xlii.

**A**nd whā the lettres were made by Olyuer  
and by the lordes / they were gyuen vnto a  
messaunger / and badde hym make all dylly  
gence that he coude / the whiche he dyde / and  
whan he was comen to London he presens  
ted them to the kynge / and whan the kynge hadde redde  
them alow / ye may well thynke that he was ryght Ioy  
ous and gladd. And therfore he made theym for to be  
redde on hyghe / and whan it came to the knowlege of  
them of the courte / there was none but that he thanked  
god. And the kynge commaunded that these tydynges  
sholde be publyshed all aboute. And after mounted on



horsbacke and dyuers other lordes in his companie and  
 so came to the cathedrall chyrche of Poules in þ which  
 he gaue lounynges and praysonges to oure lord and to  
 the valyaunte Olyuer. ¶ I retorne here to Olyuer the  
 whiche assembled al the grettest of his armye & demaun-  
 ded them yf they had ony talent to doo a good thyng.  
 And they answered ye & that it sholde not holde at them.  
 Then Olyuer sayd my lordes frendes and felowes god  
 hath gyuen vs so fayre auecture that we can neuer than  
 be hy ynoughe. Therfore me semeth seyng oure good

begynnyng of that it stycke not at you we maye do yet  
some good thyng. For ye ought for to knowe that there  
was neuer men moze abashed than our enemyes were  
whan they knewe the veryte how it wente / that one of  
theyr kynges was slayne / and the other twayne taken /  
and with this all theyr men of warre slayne / in whome  
they assayed them. And thus the as me semeth saynge þ  
we be not ferre from theyr marches / yf that we put vs  
in to theyr countree hastely / afore that theyr grete an-  
guysshe and sorowe were passed / and without guyng  
them leyser to thynke on theyr affayres / we sholde fyn-  
de them so vnpurueyde / that in them sholde be lytell res-  
sytence / and there is myne aduyce vnd. r correccyō / for  
as me semeth yf that we myght conquere this countree  
ye sholde be worthy to haue grete louyng and recomen-  
dacyon / and shall be dygne neuer to be put out of memo-  
rye amonst the noble & valyannnt men. Those capytay-  
nes herynge the wordes of Olyuer preyled hym moche  
in theyr hertes / and well semed theym that that whiche  
he had sayd proceded of a hyghe and noble courage / ther-  
fore all of one accorde without lōge counsayl sayde vnto  
hym. Olyuer we ben departed for to serue the kyng as  
gaynst his enemyes / and the after / and therfore we telle  
you that where someuer ye wyll go / we shall folowe you  
as they that wyll lyue and deye with you / and neuer to  
fayle you. ¶ Olyuer saynge the affectyon of those noble  
men towarde hym / and the good wyll that they hadde /  
to do the kynges seruyce / thāked them / in offtyng vnto  
them bothe body and goodes.





Holo Olyuer entred in to Irlande and assyged a kyng / the whiche was socoured of foure other kynges / that the sayd Olyuer dyscomfyed. Capitulo. xliij.



**B**y this maner was concluded the vyage in to Irlande / and toke in the towne as many paelions and têtes as they myghte gete / and all thyng that was necessarye for theyr vyage / and departed from thens / and toke with them a thousande men on horsbacke / and as many on foote / without theyr nombze. And also they toke with them as moche artyllerye & other habyllementes of warre as

that they myght well haue without dysgarnysshynge of  
the towne / and it was tolde them afore they departyns  
ge / by them that had charge for to bury the deed folke &  
they had founde deed of theyr enemyes. xxiij. M. and of  
theyr mē. xij. C. wherfore theyr frendes were ryght dys-  
pleasaunt. And they assembled shippes and entred into  
þe see / and dyde so moche that in shORTE tyme they were  
oute of the realme of Englande / and entred in to Irland  
de where as they began for to do moche harme / and fou-  
de but fewe places that resysted agaynst them / for they  
be not so stronge as these of this regyon. They that wes-  
re taken by force had no mercy but that they slewe them  
all. They that dyde yelde them to theym afore that they  
besyged them / were taken to mercey. And w<sup>th</sup> this they  
fered so sore theyr enemyes / that the moost parte of them  
yelded them or they came to them. Then þe kynges of þe  
countree that were escaped fro the batayll were soo sore  
abasshed that they coude not put no counsayll to theyre  
affayres / for theyr folke were yet full of sorowe / bycause  
of the dolorous fortune that hadde happened theym.  
Wherfore they habandonned all in the wyll of god / and  
alonely forterfyed the places where as they wolde retray  
them / but this was not but that they gaue often assaul-  
tes and scarmoshes to the Englyshmen ryght subtylye  
gouerned on theyr syde / wherthughe there was many  
men slayne on bothe partyes. And in suche wyse by suc-  
cessyon of tyme that the moost parte yelded them to the  
And þe ryche themself helped for to warre agaynst theyr  
lordes. In that estate they wente and assyged a place /  
where as one of the kynges of Irland was / that hadde  
ben newe crowned. And was his sone that Olyuer dyd  
slee at the tozneyment. The whiche they assaylled ryght

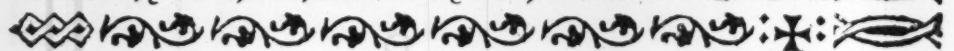
quyckely / and boystouſly / and there was done on the one  
ſyde and on the other grete dedes of armes for they that  
were within the caſtel defended them bygouſouſly / ſoo  
that they receyued that daye but lytell dommage. The  
kyng Maquemoz was aduertyled of theſe thynges / and  
how the ſyge was afoze the place of his couſyn. Wherefo  
re he was ryght dyspleaſant. And ſwoze by his crowne  
that it ſholde not abyde ſe. He aſſembled as moche folke  
as he myght. And then he the thyrde kyng came for to  
arpyſe the ſyge. Olyuer was aduertyled of all theſe thy  
nges / wherefoze he put hymſelfe on the felde for to abyde  
them. And lefte a partye of his folke for to kepe the ſy  
ge. He put his folke in ordynaunce / and abode his enemies  
all tedy for to fryght / the whiche abode not longe or y  
they came. And whan they ſawe that Olyuer was alre  
dy on the felde / they knewe well that they coude not eſca  
pe without medlyng. And then they put theyz folke in  
ryght fayre ordenaunce / and began for to ſhote gonnes  
and Olyuer and his folke remeuyd not / but abode the  
with ferme fote / and with one crye receyued them at the  
poyntes of theyz ſwerdes & ſperes. And there was ſlayn  
at the fyrſt recountre dyuers me on bothe partyes. Full  
many ladyes loſt theyz lordes / and many chyldzen were  
faderles / and full many maydens loſt theyz louers there  
Olyuer cutte of hedes and armes in ſuche maner that  
neuer mā dyde moze dedes of armes than he dyde. Not  
withſtandyng the Fryſſhmen ſolde theyz lyues ryghte  
derely / as men replenyſhed with prowelle / for as them  
ſemed and they loſt that batayll / that in lyke wyſe they  
ſholde leſe theyz countree / wherefoze theyz courage dou  
bled and dyde as well as they myght. In that eſtate du  
red the batayll almoſt vnto theyz nyght / but in the ende

Oly.

R. I.



the Irishemen were dyscomfyted/as they that myghte  
 te not endure the sadde strokes of the Englysshemen.  
**T**he pursuyte dured not longe bycause of the nyghte  
 The kynge Maquemoz and two other kynges were ta  
 ken/wherof Olyuer was ryght gladde/for he had alre  
 dyspue/and so there was no moo lefte but two/wherof  
 there abode one enclosed in y place where the syege was  
 Whan the nyght was comen Olyuer in his tente made  
 the kynges prysoners to be seruyd ryght honourably.  
 And on y morowe he made to crye that euery body shol  
 de put hym in payne for to do his deuorze to take y plas  
 ce. Then ye sholde haue sene many a valyaunt knyght  
 and squyre/and me of armes go to the assaulte but they  
 of within defended them soo valyauntly that it was gre  
 te meruayll. And the kyge sayd that he hadde leuer deye  
 than for to yelde hym in to the handes of his enemyes/  
 and to hym that hadde slayne his fader.



**H**ow the castell and place where as one of the kyn  
 ges of Irlande was in was taken. Capitulo. xliij.



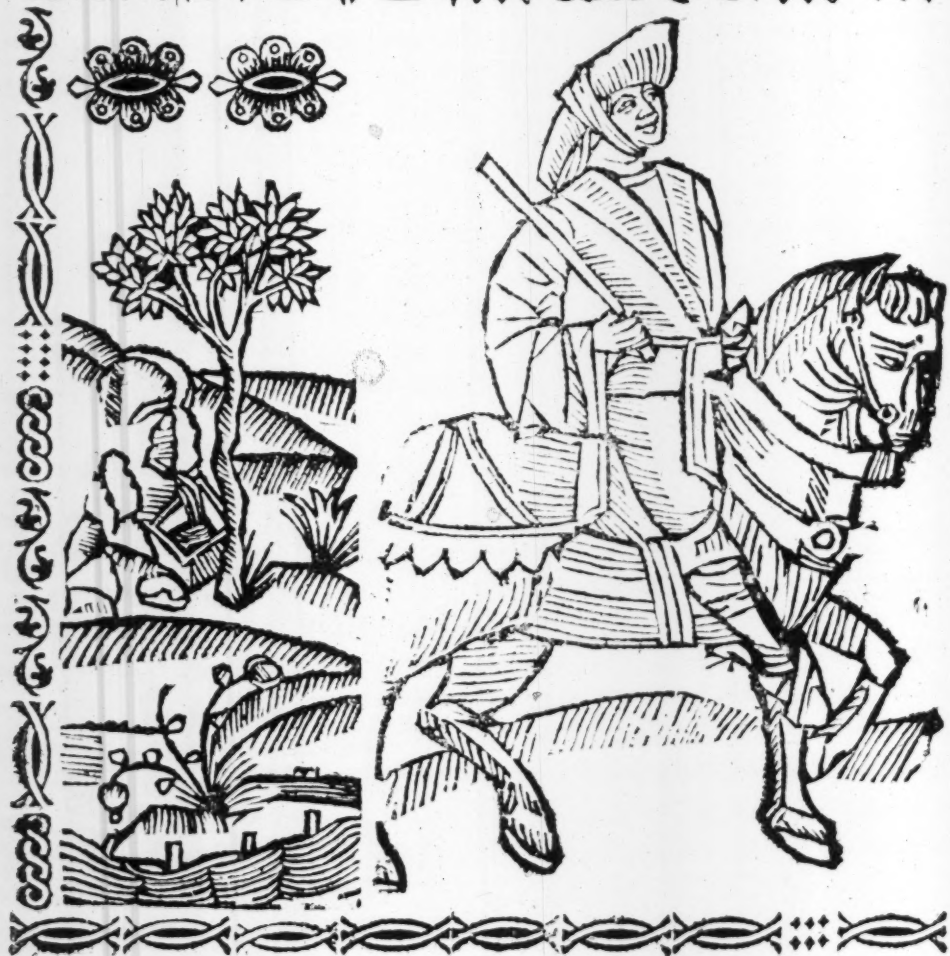
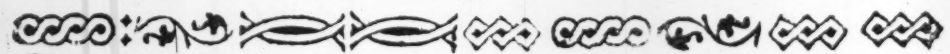
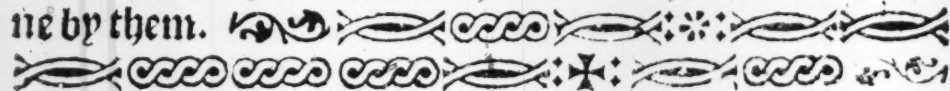
Uen so as ye haue herde endured the syege by  
 longe space of tyme afoze y castell. Duryng  
 the whiche tyme Olyuer made often the kyn  
 ge of Englande to knowe of his demeanynge  
 And sente hym often worde that he sholde ha  
 ue noo doubte of them/for they had nothyng but good  
 The artillerie that was there endommaged strongly  
 the castell/and so moche that a grete parte of the walle  
 was smyten downe/and then it was assaylled at that  
 syde. Olyuer was in that assaulte and bare hym so valy

antly that he was the fyrste that entred in / wherfore all  
his men folowed hym. And at that tyme was the castell  
wonne / and the kynge taken. But afore that he was ta-  
ken he dyde grete dedes of armes / and all the other wes  
re slayne. Olyuer departed from thens / and lefte good  
garnyson there. He put hym on the waye for to goo con-  
quere the realme of the sone of hym that he hadde slayne  
in the fyrst batayll. But that same kynge abode not his  
comynge / but came agaynst Olyuer without ony armou-  
re at all / berynge in his hande a braunche of Olyue in þ  
sygne of peas. And whan he sawe Olyuer he sayd to hym  
O ryght balyaunt conquerour / afore whome nothynge  
can endure / by the furoure of thy swerde thou hast sub-  
dued seven kyngdomes / and hast the kynges prysoners  
wherfore I knowe that my persone alonely can not res-  
yste agaynste thy persone and puyssaunce. Therfore I  
come and yelde me at thy wyll / and do offre me and my  
realme for to serue the. Olyuer thanked hym and tooke  
hym by the hande / & sayd that he sholde soupe with hym  
that nyght. Then Olyuer commaunded that the tētes  
sholde be pyght in a fayre grene felde that was not ferre  
from thē / by the whiche dyuers ryuers and fountaynes  
passed by / wherfore the place was moze delectable. Oly-  
uer commaunded that the kynges that had bē prysoners  
of longe tyme / the whiche were abyden in a stronge for-  
tresse not ferre from thē sholde be brought to hym / and  
made to saye to his cooke that he sholde make redy the  
souper in þ best maner that he coude / for he wolde feest  
the seven kynges in his paulyon. And whā the houre  
of souper approached / he made them to sytte downe at a  
table / and souped rychelý. After souper Olyuer made a  
uoysdaunce / and sayd vnto the seven kynges howe that

Oly.

K.ij.

they were prysoners / not to come of them / but at the ple  
sure and wyll of the kyng of Englade / that they hadde  
so bylaynously offended and made grete doubte that he  
wolde punysshed them greuously as it apperteyned / &  
tolde them that they sholde be ledde to hym on the next  
morowe / and that they sholde thynke on that that they  
wolde doo / for to amende the offence that hadde ben do  
ne by them.





How Olyuer after dyuers thynges / sente for to de-  
nounce his comyng to the kyng of Englande / and of  
the honour that was done to hym. Capitulo. xlv.



One after dyuers wordes came y<sup>e</sup> spyces &  
y<sup>e</sup> wyne / & after they wente vnto bedde vnto  
to the morowe / y<sup>e</sup> euery body by the comaū-  
dement of the capytayns made the redy to  
departe and soo euery thyng packed & trust-  
fed they retorned towarde London. And than Olyuer  
called vnto hym a ryght valyaunt knyght and one of y<sup>e</sup>  
capytaynes Englysshe / to whome he prayed moche cur-  
taylly that he wolde goo towarde the kyng & denounce  
to hym theyr comyng / and that he coude tell hym the  
thynges better than ony coude wyte theym. The kny-  
ght in accomplysshyng the wyll of Olyuer put hys selfe  
on the waye & he dyde so moche that within a lytell spa-  
ce he arriued at London / and salued the kyng / and ma-  
de the recōmaundacyous ryght humbly frome Olyuer  
and all his felows / and than he began to tell hym how  
they were on y<sup>e</sup> waye to retorne / and that y<sup>e</sup> seven kynges  
domes of Irland were conquered / and put in y<sup>e</sup> obeyss-  
saunce of his septr. And that Olyuer brought hym the  
seven kynges prysoners for to doo with them his good  
pleasure. And began to deuyse hym of y<sup>e</sup> valyaunce that  
he had sene Olyuer do / and that with payne it was cre-  
dyble that the whiche he hadde sene Olyuer accomplyss-  
he. And sayd syre after god and his holy moder gyue  
thankynges vnto the ryght valyaunt knyght Olyuer /  
for by his ryght arme ye haue obtayned vyctory of all  
your enemyes. And certaynly I thynke that neuer god  
gaue to no man so moche goodnesse as he hath gyue to

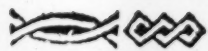
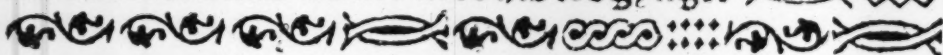
Oly.


K.iii.

this same. The kynge herynge those Joyous tydynge  
was so replenysshed with Joye that he was a longe spa  
ce or that he myght speke. Neuerthelesse sone after he en  
braced the knyght and sayd. My frende ye be ryght wel  
come I thanke god / the armes / and the swerde of the  
ryghte gentyll knyght / of the Joyous tydynge that ye  
brynge me. And after commaunded hym for to tell it on  
hyghe. So he began for to recounte it more lenger than  
he hadde done to the kynges persone. And allwaye pray  
synge and louynge Olyuer / saynge that it was a thyng  
of the other worlde / and not for to byleue to theym that  
had not sene it. These tydynge were sone spredde abou  
te in the ladyes chambres / and came to the eeres of the  
fayre Helayne that was moche Joyous of that whiche  
she herde / and her thought that and he hadde ben kynge  
and she quene / that all the worlde sholde haue be the bet  
ter. Wherefore her courage blamed strongly her fader by  
cause that he kepte from so gentyll a knyght that y<sup>e</sup> whic  
che was due to hym. The kynge enquiryed and demaun  
ded the daye of his comynge / and made to ordeyne a ry  
ghte grete feest at theyr comynge. He commaunded all  
the grete lordes and prynces of his realme for to be there  
And whan it came that Olyuer approached nere the Cy  
te / all the prynces wete agaynst hym / and there was no  
ne of them but that they dyde hym honoure and reueren  
ce. The kynge hadde ordeyned that he sholde be ledde in  
grete tryumphe thorughe the cyte. And therfore the stre  
tes were hanged / and the fyres alghed / and the belles  
rungen on all sydes. Also the processions on all sydes  
wente agaynst hym to the gate of the cyte. And whan  
Olyuer apperceyued the processions he alghed of his  
hous / and consequently all the grete lordes that dydde

hym that honoure. And in that estate they came vnto þ  
cathedral chyrche of Doules where as they gaue than  
kynges and lounyes to almyghty god and to our lady  
And then they mounted on horsbacke / and then Olyuer  
sente the seven kynges prysoners in to þ places that we  
re ordeyned for them. And he all armed wente towarde  
the kyng / the whiche he salued ryght humbly. Whā the  
kyng apperceyued hym he wente agaynst hym / and be  
gan for to kysse hym & colle hym saynge / my ryght swe  
te frende / blessyd be the fader that engendred the / and  
the moder that bare the. And thanked be my blessyd lor  
de that euer gaue the wyll for to come in to this countre  
the whiche at this presente tyme is so gretely honoured  
and redoubted by thy swerde. I praye to god that he gy  
ue me space for to deserue it to you warde Olyuer answe  
red to hym. Syr thanke our lorde / and after the valy  
aunt men that ye gaue to me / and not me / for take that  
I haue done the best that I can / yet I haue not deser  
ued the honoure that ye do to me. The kyng answered  
that he was aduertysed of euery thyng / and commaun  
ded hym to go and dysarme hym. And whan the houre  
of souper sholde approche that he sholde retorne / & that  
he sholde brynge with hym the seven kynges / for he wol  
de soupe with them in his palays. Olyuer wente towar  
de his maystres / to whome the kyng hadde commaun  
ded / that all the honoure that she coude make hym / that  
she sholde do it. And therfore whan she sawe Olyuer co  
me towarde her / she wente agaynst hym and toke hym  
by the hande and kyssed hym in saynge that he was ry  
ght welcome / and that she was glad of his welfare / but  
bycause that the souper tyme approached that he sholde  
sethe the kynges prysoners / he abode not longe there /




but toke leue and wente in to his lodgyng.   


**H**ow Olyuer came in to the courte accompaned/  
of the seven kynge's prysoners / of whiche he made a  
present to the kynge of Englande. Capitulo. xlvj.  




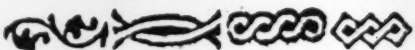




**W**han y O'puer was dysarmed / and habyle  
led of newe clothes / he same ryght well ac  
cōpanyed of noble mē o. y kynges court /  
y had grete desyre for to please hym / in to  
y lodgys of the leuē kynges the whiche he  
salued / and sayd to them that the Kyng his lord wol  
de speke with them and soupe with them / they sayd that  
they wolde go gladlye / and mounted on horsbacke / and  
Olyuer also with them that conduyted them. And whā  
they entred in to the court dyuers lordes / and prynces  
of Englande came agaynst them that dyde lede them to  
warde the kyng / the whiche whan he lawe them in his  
chambre / he remeuyd not from his place / y other bowy  
ge theyr knees lowe ynoughe. And whan they appro  
ched nere the kyng / the kyng toke of his hatte and in  
marchynge thre or foure paas agaynst them / sayd that  
they were ryght welcome. And whan he had salued thē  
all / he began for to deuyse with them of dyuers thyngis  
pleasaunt withoute makynge ony mencyon of warre.  
And so longe they were in these deuysses that the houre  
of souper was comen / and the water blowen. The Kyng  
of Englande had ordeyned that thre tables sholde be  
sette in the halle. One moze eleuate and hygher thā the  
other. And at that table the kyng satte hym downe / and  
commaunded Olyuer for to sytte with hym / the whiche  
durst not dysobeye the kynges commaundement. And  
therfore all ashamed he satte hys downe / and there was  
no moo. After he commaunded that the Kynges of Ire  
lande sholde be sette. The mayster cōtroller that knewe  
well ynoughe what he sholde do / made them for to sytte  
at the seconde table / and all the other prynces the which  
were without nombre satte at the thyrde table / and we

Oly.

L. h.

re ryght sumptuously seruyd. 

¶ How the kynge of Englande gaue his fayre doughter vnto Olyuer in querdon and rewarde of the hre seruyces that he had done to hym. Capitulo. xlviii.



**R**yght as they hadde souped / and that the tables were taken vp / & graces rendred vnto god / the kynge comaunded for to go fetch his fayre doughter Helayne / to the ende that the daunces were begonne. And the noble & valyaunt knyght Olyuer wente for to fetch his goodly and excellent maystres. And whan that she was comen and that she had salued her fader / she salued after the se



uen kynges/euen so as she coude full well do it / and the  
other lordes enseruynge. Then were the daunces begon  
the whiche the kyng behelde gladly. And in beholdyng  
Olyuer daunce/he thought in hym selfe how it sholde be  
possyble for to rendre to hym the guerdon of his scruyce  
And thoughte soo moche that a more gretter thyng he  
myghte not gyue hym than his doughter / that afore he  
had wone by force of armes / but bycause that he hadde  
taken her from hym/parauenture he wolde haue dysday  
ne for to take her agayne / whertore he concluded for to  
speke to hym after the daunces in the presence of all them  
that were there/or that wolde be there. And euen soo as  
he had thought it he dyde it. And whan all was faylled/  
and that his doughter was comen for to gyue hym good  
nyghte. He made to be sayd to her that whan she sholde  
be in her chābre / that she sholde not bye her vnto bedde  
The whiche dyde euen so. After he called Olyuer in the  
presence of the kynges of Irlandes/and of the other pryn  
ces and lordes that were there. Olyuer my frende I bes  
gyn for to haue knowlege of my caas / and how that of  
longe tyme I haue with holdē that whiche ought to be  
yours/that is my doughter. That the whiche dyde mo  
ue me therto was bycause that I knewe not/so playnly  
your estate as I do now. But truly and helayne were  
quene of all þ world I wolde thynke her wel bestowed  
on you / as to the moost valyauntest knyght of þ world  
Thus I then knowynge all these thynges shall gyue to  
you the moost derest thyng that I haue/þ is my dough  
ter/þf it please you for to take her to your wyfe. Wherby  
after my deth ye may be kyng of Englande/the whiche  
wolde be ryght happy to haue suche a lorde. The synys  
shed the kyng his wordes. Whan Olyuer sawe that the

Oly.

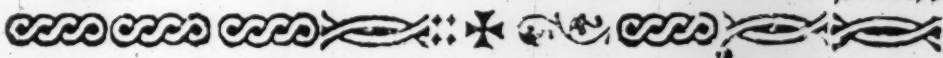
A.ii.

kynge had fynnyshed his wordes / he sette hym on bothe  
 his knees / and began to saye these wordes. Ryght ho-  
 nourable lord / truly there is no seruyce but of a kynge  
 for I may wel auaunte me / that with lytell descriuynge  
 I haue the grettest guerdon that cuer hadde man / wher  
 of I gyue lounynges to god and to you graces and than-  
 kes / noz neuer pooze man as I am hadde the hondrethe  
 parte of the honour that ye do to me. I praye to god that  
 he gyue me grace to deserue it vnto your hyghnesse. For  
 by you my name shall be chaunged / and they that shall  
 here speke of this mater / shall name me the seruaunte  
 hyghly guerdonned.



**H**ow þ kyng made Olyuer for to aryse that was  
on his knees / and of þ gracious wordes that he sayd  
to his doughter / and how Olyuer handfest her. Capi-  
tulo.

xlviij.



Then the kyng commaunded Olyuer for to  
aryse / and sente for his doughter. And whan  
she was comen / he toke her by the hande and  
ledde her to hym and sayd. My frende se he-  
re my doughter that I gyue you to your wy-  
fe / in acquytinge my promesse. Olyuer thanked hym ry-  
ghte humblye. The poore Helayne that of al this knewe  
nothyng / was more abaſhed than euer she had ben afo-  
re / and began for to chaunge coloure / wherby her beaus-  
te was not mynyſhed. Whan the kyng ſawe her in that  
eſtate / he ſayd to her. My ryght dere doughter I haue  
all troubled you as ſeemeth me / whā I haue gyue you to  
a man without knowynge your wyll. But by the helpe  
of god he ſhall do nothyng to you but that ye may well  
ſuffre and endure / as I deme. Then Olyuer began for  
to laughe at the wordes that the kyng had ſayd. Wher-  
fore Helayne was more aſhamed than ſhe had ben afore  
The archebiſſhop that was in the halle dyde handfeſte  
them. Then began for to ſpeke by the kynges commaun-  
dement an auicyent knyght / þ whiche adreſſyd his wor-  
des vnto the kynges of Irelande / and ſayd to them that  
the kyng his ſoucrayne lord for the loue of the ſolemp-  
nyte that ſholde be on the morowe / and alſo for the loue  
of Olyuer / he was contente to rendre to them theyꝝ real-  
nies / quyte theyꝝ raiſons / and ſende them agayne in  
to theyꝝ countrees without ony dommage / by ſuche moꝝ

Dij.

L.iiij.



pen / that eche of them sholde do hym homage / and holde of hym theyr landes. With this that as often as þe kynge's good pleasure sholde be for to sende for the / in warre / or in peas / that they sholde come and serue hym. And fro thens forth to holde hym for theyr souerayne lord. They knowynge that of two euylles it is the beste to eschewe the worst / accorded to the kynges request / & dyd homage vnto the kyng of Englande. And after these thynges / and that they had daunced ones aboute for the espousayles euery body wente to bedde / but Olyuer slepte not that nyght / but watched al þe nyght / as he þe wolde with a good wyll haue ben a daye elder / & thanked god of his goodnes. For hym semyd that he was lyfte out of his euyl aduētūre / and so passed the nyght. And whan the daye was comen and that it was tyme for hym to arise / the kyng that knewe well ynoughe that Olyuer coude not haue his gownes made so soone / sente hym / thre or foure gownes of clothe of golde beten. And whā Olyuer was apparaylled / all the prynces and lordes came and fetchd hym / and fyue kynges of Irland came / and the other twayne abode for to accompany the fayre Delayne.

How Olyuer wedded the fayre Delayne / and of þe solempnyte of the espousayles. Capitulo. clix.

**R**yght sone after that all these thynges were redy. Olyuer came in to þe court accompanied as ye haue herde afore / & wente to þe portall of þe chapell / where as he founde þe Archebysshop redy. They hadde not bene longe there whan that they herde comynge to them grete foyson of



troumpettes / and mynstrelles / and began for to solwe /  
 and come to warde the chapell after them / and there cas  
 me dyuers kynges and herauldes of armes / and after  
 came the Wylshers And after theym then came Helayne  
 aourned as it apperteyneth to a byrde / and to a lady of  
 so ryall a lygnage. She was accompanied of dyuers la  
 dyes and damoyelles that folowed her. And with this  
 she was on the ryght hande of two kynges. And came a  
 softe paas vnto the place where as Olyuer abode her /

Oly.

L.iiij.

And they hadde not ben longe there whan the kynge came/at whose compynge they were wedded. The seruyce was done. The tables were layde / & then they set them to dyner after that the ladyes were retorned from the chambres. Who that wolde deuyse to pouer the seruyce of the sayd dyner / the gyftes that were gyven as well on the one syde as on the other / it sholde be to longe a thyngge to recoûte. The yonge men of the kynges courte that neuer were dyfferent to no thyngge that was for Justes made crye a Justynge for the after dyner / where as the ladyes were. Also a tozneyment was cryed. xvi. agaynst xvi. that was a ryght fayre syght to se. Olyuer Justed not by cause he sholde not be defouled / & to the ende that he sholde be freshe for to daunce at nyghte / but he was mouited on a grete courser and dyde meruaylles. He serued one of the kynges of Irelande / that for to do hym honoure Justed / and foure of the other also. And dyde so well that twayne of the fyue had the pryce / one within / and the other without. And it was gyven them mo that they departed from the tyltes / as they that hadde done best. And after that euery body was come to the courte the ladyes were clothed in newe gownes. And then they wente to the banquet that was alredy apparaylled. Yf they were well seruyd it is no nede to demaunde it. For there was neuer a fayrer feest in England / after that of the grete tozneyment / that had ben afore. And whan it was after the banquet y daunces began / and Olyuer ledde the fayre Helayne at the daunces / that euery body sawe gladly. For all the worlde sayd that they had neuer sene a moze fayrer couple of folke togyder. After that y daunces had endured a longe space of tyme / the fayre & noble Helayne was ledde vnto bedde. And then wyne &

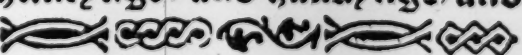


spyes were broughte. The whiche Olyuer abode not/  
 For he was alredy in his chambze where as he dysabyl/  
 led hym. And whan he knewe that the byrde was a bed/  
 incontynant he put hym on the ware towarde the cham/  
 bz. And whan he was there he chased all the ladyes out  
 excepte one. And came towarde the table where as the  
 banquet was on/and kest it to the erthe/to the ende that  
 he sho de not be awaked/then he came to the doze/and  
 locked it/and wente to bedde to her that of longe tyme  
 he hadde loued/& she hated hym not/wherfoze they we  
 re the better contentie togyder/and of the surplus I hol  
 de my peas. But the hystoꝛye sayth that vpon that same  
 nyght they engendꝛed a chylde male/the whiche dydde  
 sythe moche good/and exalted our cryste fayth agaynst  
 the sarasyns/in bengynge the dethe of our lord Ihesu  
 cryst.

¶ How Olyuer was vertuous in appesynge  
 stryfes/and noyses/and how his wyfe was  
 greue with a sone/the whiche was named He  
 ry. Capitulo.

¶ **W**han it came to the kynges knowlege that  
 Olyuer had casten downe the table y<sup>e</sup> the  
 baker was on/he began for to laughe. And  
 sayd y<sup>e</sup> he had ryght well wrought/wherfo  
 re no body wolde not medle for to entre in  
 y<sup>e</sup> chambze/& was not awaked of no body vnto the morn  
 we/at a. xi. of the clocke/and y<sup>e</sup> the kyng had dyned/the  
 whiche came vnto the chambze doze/and beganne for to  
 call them/and sayd that it was daye & tyme for to ryse/

Olyuer the whiche slepte not came in his cherte and opened the doore to the kynge / the whiche entred alone / and came vnto his doughters bedde / where as he comforted her as well as he myght. In saynge þ he knewe it well of longe ago that she was to yonge for to slepe with the mē. The whiche answered nothyng vnto hym for any thyng that he coude doo. Wherfore he toke leue of her / & sayd to her that she was euyll contente with hym sythe that she wolde not speke to hys. After that he was departed / the ladyes came and toke her vp. Thenne whan she was redy she wente to masse / but this was not without foyson of regardes of dyuers lordes and ladyes / the whiche with one accorde Iuged þ she halted not. The masse was sayd / and the dyner passed / the whiche was ryghte plenteuous of all goodes. And þ kynge helde open courtes by the space of .xv. dayes / after the whiche all the lordes toke leue of hym. And the kyng abode in his symple estate / reserued that Olyuer had his estate as a kynges sone / and receyved dyuers gentylmen of his courte. The kynges of Irlande toke theys leue for to retorne home / In offeryng them alwaye at þ kynges pleasure / & Olyuers / for god had gyuen hym suche grace that euery body loued hym. The debates and dyscordes amonge the gentylmen. Olyuer appealed to his power. The poore knyghtes by his largesse were made ryche. He was the defendour of wydowes and Orphelns / and to his power to all dyscomforted and dysolute he gaue comforte and counsayll. Shortly all vertues that were possyble to be in a mannes mortall body / floryshed in this ryght valaunt and gentyll knyght / in suche wyse that euery body louyd hym & blessyd his compaignie. And helde the kyng for wyse and prudent that so sone coude knowe his cō

dyrons / and that he had so kepte his doughter to mar  
ry her so vertuously / without t. any kynge on couetyse / so  
the kynge lyued in grete ease within his courte / & in gre  
te lousye and glozys without. And was so moche fered  
and redoubted that none durst do hym dyspleasure / but  
was mayster and lord of all his neyghbours. The fayr  
& good Helayne that was with chylde was not of lesse  
recommendacon ayenst her / for all vertues that a wo  
man ought for to haue habounded in her. It happened  
that after that she had bozned her terme / she was deliue  
red of a payre sone / the whiche was named at the fonte  
stone Henry. And this chylde gaue so moche Joye to the  
kynge / and to all them of the realme y it was meruayll  
But that same chylde wylt and knewe that he ought yet  
to be the moost derest holden of all the other. For he was  
one of the best and valyauntest knyghtes that euer was  
Neuerthelesse he was not kynge of Englande / for he de  
yed yonge / wherof it was grete dommage. ¶ A lōge tyme  
dyde passe and so moche that the fayr Helayne was  
with chylde agayne / the whiche was deliuered of a fayr  
re doughter / y whiche was ryght sollemnely baptysed  
and she was named Clarysse. The fayr Helayne and  
Olyuer were so assotted and doted on theyr chylde that  
it was a grete meruayll / and I am not abashed. For  
they ought well to be so. The moder hadde them alwaye  
bytwen her armes / and myght not forgo the syght of  
them. It was the passe tyme of Olyuer / for the realme  
of Englande was in peas / and wylt not wherin to occu  
pye hym saue to goo on huntynge / and haukynge / and  
for to make good chere. 



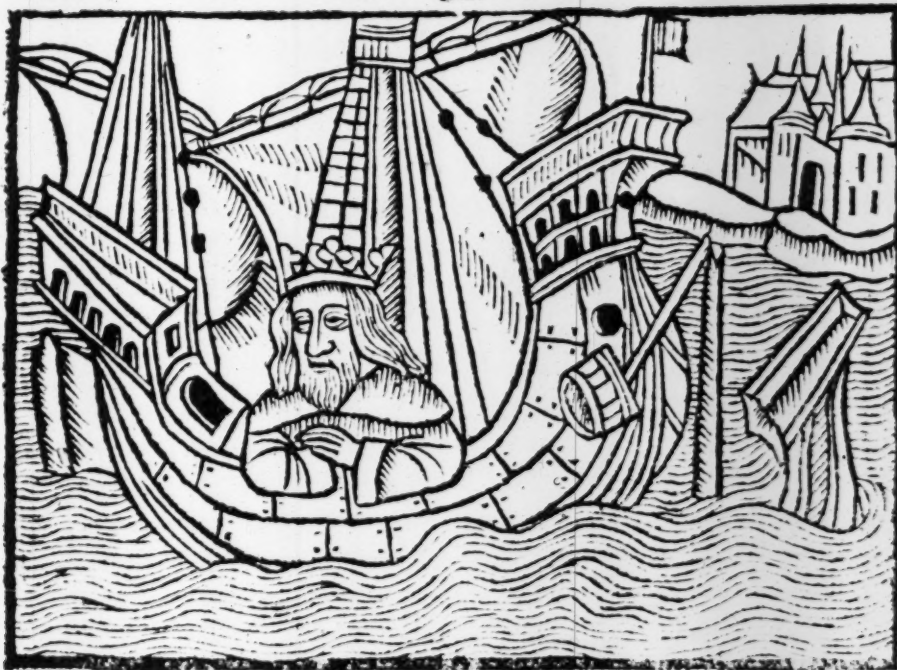


**H**ow Olyuer wente on huntynge / & of the bysion  
of his wyfe the whiche she tolde vnto hys. Capit. li.



Olyuer passed his tyme Joyously / soo as ye  
haue herde. ¶ It happened that the hun-  
ters made hym to knowe that the grettest  
wylde boze that euer was sene / was in the  
forest fyue myle thens. Olyuer that loued  
well hūtnge was ryght Joyous / and sayd that he wol-  
de go ryght gladly / wherfore on an after none he depar-  
ted from the cyte / & lodged hym in a byllage by y forest  
where the wylde boze was in. That nyght his wyfe dre-  
med a meruaylous dreame / for her thought that she was  
on huntynge with her lord / and that she sawe a Tygre  
meruaylously grete / that with his teeth / and his narles  
deuoured Olyuer / and bare hym awaye she wylste not  
where. Of his bysion all trymblynge the fayre Helayne  
awaked / and coude not slepe after that. And on the mor-  
rowe she sente worde to her lord / & requyred hym that  
he wolde not hunte as for that daye / for and he dyde her  
berte Jugged her that he sholde haue some hurte. Olyuer  
herynge the message of his wyfe dyde no thyng but lau-  
ghe / for hym semed y dreames were but fantasyes / wher-  
fore he sente worde to his wyfe that she sholde make go-  
de chere / & that he wolde bynge her some benyson / then  
he mounted on horsbacke and wente to y forest / and byn-  
coupled the houndes / and began for to hunte. The Oly-  
uer put hym in to the forest / and folowed the houndes /  
wherfore he dyde folpe. For yf he had byleued the coun-  
sayll of his wyfe / it had not happened to hym as it dyde  
For so as he folowed the houndes as nere as he myghte  
the wylde boze came that was on fore / and trauctled

afoze hym. Olyuer that was wel horsed smote hym with  
 the spozres / and ranne after. And he dyde so moche that  
 he had lost all his men within a lytell whyle. Alas pf he  
 had knowen of the euyl aduenture / he wolde not haue  
 putte hym so soone in the fozeft / but as he that toke no  
 hede rode on alwaye without kepyng any waye / so as  
 his euyl aduenture ledde hym. O kynge of Englande  
 truely of a longe tyme thou shalte not se thy fayre sone  
 Olyuer / nor thou ryght fayre Helayne of a longe tyme  
 thou shalt not se thy lorde and husbnde.



How the kynges sone of Irlande / of whiche  
Olyuer had slayne his fader at the tozneyment /  
founde Olyuer all alone fro his me / & toke hym  
prysoner / and of the grete sorowe that was made  
for hym. Capitulo. lii.



**F**ore that Olyuer apperceyued that no boe  
dyd folowe hym / he was ferre from his  
folke. And whan he founde hymselfe alone /  
he blewe his horne / but none answered hym  
Wherfore he put hym on the waye in an vn-  
happy houre. For the more that he wente forwarde / the  
ferder he was from them. Thus as he wente so the wyl-  
de boze that was ferre from hym / came amōgest a com-  
pany of men that passed thorughe the forest / the whiche  
wente to London. And the chyef was one of the kynges  
of Irlande / that same that Olyuer had slayne the fader  
of at the tozneymente. As he sawe the wylde boze / with  
suche houndes as he had he folowed / and ranne soo mos-  
che in the forest that they recoūtered Olyuer whiche was  
all alone. Then Olyuer auauanced hym and salued the  
kyng / but the kyng dysdayned to speke to hym. And  
he escryed to his men saynge / here is the murderer that  
hathe slayne my fader. Wherfore I do pray you that ye  
wyl take hy alyue / for I can not auenge me better than  
at this tyme. And whan Olyuer herde these wordes he  
sethanded to his swerde / and defended hym ryght baly-  
auntly. But in the ende whether he wolde or not he was  
taken. And the kyng made a hode all close to be put on  
his heed / to the ende that he sholde not be knownen / and  
in that estate he made hym to be ledde to a porte of y see



Where as he was put in a Chyp and ledde in to a fortreffe  
of Irlande that was that same kynges. In the whiche  
Olyuer was put in pryson full of vermyne / and had bre  
de and water ones a daye. Abydng the retoznyng of  
the kyng / that sholde do Justyce on hym at his pleasu  
re. And to the ende that his treason were not knowne /  
he retozned not / but wente to London towarde the kyn  
ge his souerayne lord / y<sup>e</sup> whiche he founde gretely dys  
comforted / for he had herde no tydynges of Olyuer the  
whiche was soughte on all sydes. What pyteous and  
innumerable lamentacyons was made whan y<sup>e</sup> trouthe  
was knowne that he coude not be founden. Certaynlye  
neuer so grette dolours was not demeaned in no countre  
The good kyng sayd. O myghty noble realme thou hast  
well lost the floure of thy crowne / and the moost parte of  
thy armour. Alas my myghty swete sone thou was he y<sup>e</sup>  
trauaylled whan I reposed me / & he by whome I was  
redoubted / and he by whome I was obeyed / and he by  
whome I lyued in rest and in surete. These regrettes  
were nothyng in comparyson to the pyteous lamenta  
cyons that his daughter made. She myght nerther ete  
nor drynke / but had layde her on a bedde as she had ben  
deed / in suche wyse that all they that sawe her had grette  
pyte on her. And whan she myght speke she escryed sayn  
ge. O my blessyd creatour wherfore dydde thou euer gyue  
me hym / that in his departyng dothe reue me in so gre  
te doloure / and dystresse vpon the erthe / certes yf it we  
re thy blessyd pleasure I wolde be in his company / then  
she complayned her vnto the blessyd byrgyn Marye in  
saynge. Myghty swete byrgyn mary moder of god what  
may I haue done to the / that thou hast separed me fro  
the syght of my myghty amiable lord and husbande that

so derely loued me. With suche or semblable wordes the  
 ryght fayre Helayne meuyd all theym aboute her / that  
 they coude not comferte her. ¶ I shall leue her to speke  
 of the kynge of Englande and his doughter / & all theym  
 of his realme demeanynge theyr sorowe. And shal speke  
 of them of the realme of Castyll / and of Arthur Kyng  
 of Algarbe / and Regent of Castyll. ⁂ :: ⁂

¶ Now Arthur Kyng of Algarbe and Regent of  
 Castyll made an enterpryse for to fynde his selowe  
 Olyuer. Capitulo. liij.





¶ I haue herde here before how Olyuer was departed from Castylle / and of the meruaylous dule that the good kyng demeaned by cause of his departyng / the whiche neuer lette hym vnto the dethe / for within shorte space it made hym fynyshe his dayes / and lyued not longe after the departyng of his sone. For the whiche cause Arthur kyng of Algarbe / and felowe of Olyuer / by the consente of Olyuers lordes of the countree / was chosen for to be Regente of Castylle vnto the retoynyng of Olyuer. And bycause that the affayres of the realme of castyll be gretter than they of Algarbe the whiche is but a lytell countree. Arthur helde hym moost in Algarbe. And forgate neuer to byspte the glasse of his felowe. And so moche that he apperceyued that the sayd glasse was suche as the lettre specyfyed. That is for to knowe that the water was troubled and gretely obscure. In suche wyse that it was almoost lyke ynke. And whan Arthur apperceyued it suche / with grete haboundaunce of teres he began for to saye in this maner. O ryght noble ryght valyaunt & loyall felowe / I se well that ye haue some grete empelhyng / or some euyl aduenture / or in sermynte of body wherfore I am ryght dyspleasaunt. And bycause that at a nede one knoweth his frende I make auowe to god and promyseth hym by the fayth that I owe vnto hym / and to the crowne that I bere / that euen as secretly as ye departed from this realme / shall I departe also. For neuer as longe as I lyue shall I not reste / tyll that I knowe whether that ye be a lyue or deed. The in toppyng his eyen / he departed out of the chambze / and came in to a halle. And commaunded to make lettres for to assemble all the thze estates / and all the prynces of the

Oly.

Ar.



countree. And whan they were all assembled / he began  
for to shewe them and sayd that it was not possyble for  
hym to gouerne bothe þ realmes well that he had in his  
charge. And therfore his wyll was for to commyse some  
dyscrete prynce in his stede to be Regent of Castyll. For  
he wolde retorne in to that of Algarbe / bycause that he  
loued it moze / for by cause that it was his propre heritas  
ge / and that it was the place of his byrthe. Therfore he  
wolde knowe of them / yf it were theyr good pleasure y  
he resygned his estate at his dyscrecyon to the moost wy  
sest as hyr semed. Or yf they wolde chese one after theyr  
dyscrecyon and counsayll. They answered. Ryght myghty  
saunt kynge of Algarbe we haue not holden you for Re  
gente / but for kynge vnto the comynge of Olyuer as ye  
do knowe / for we neuer founde you dyslober saunt. And  
also there is none of vs but that we wolde do you as so  
me pleasure as to our souerayne lord. Your wyll and de  
partynge is full greuous vnto vs. But syth it is so that  
we can not kepe you / chese whiche of vs it shall please  
you and gyue hym your stede. For we shall holde youre  
eleccon. For all that we shall neuer haue man soo dree  
as you. Arthur thanked them / and dyde chese a good pryn  
ce that was ryght vertuous for to be regente. And then  
he toke leue of them in grete wepynges. And then he to  
ke a certayne nombre of men with hym / and he dyde so  
moche that within a shorte space he came in to his real  
me / and whan he was there / he recommaunded to his  
conestable all the gouernaunce of his countree. And af  
ter commaunded al his men to obeie to hym / and sayde  
that he wolde ge in to a place all alone / the whiche was  
not ferre of. And that with the grace of god he wolde not  
tarye longe. This done he departed in a fayre moynyng

gan  
for  
his  
ome  
for  
at he  
ptas  
e he  
re p  
wy  
gey  
upls  
Re  
s ye  
And  
s so  
d de  
hat  
case  
oure  
dcre  
yn  
hen  
e to  
e so  
eals  
his  
d of  
yde  
was  
not  
yng

and wente his way withouten ony company / saue of  
god alonely / to whome I praye that he be in his garde /  
for grete nede he hadde therof / as ye shal here here after  
warde.

How Arthur departed / and put hym on the waye  
for to fynde his felowe / and of the aduentures that  
he had. Capitulo. liii.

In suche maner as ye haue herde departed the  
bailpaunt and gentyll Arthur from his coun-  
tree. And began for to serche tydynge of his  
felowe / as he that hadde wyll neuer for to reste  
tyll that he had herde tydynge of hym. The  
firste countree that he arriued in was Dortyngale / in  
the whiche he founde nothyng that was pleasaunt vn-  
to hym. After he sought the remenaunt of Spayne / and  
came in to that of Fraunce / and wente so moche on one  
syde and other that he came to Calys / where as he foun-  
de men that wente in to Engiande / and therfore he mou-  
ted on the see for to go thider. Ye maye well thynke that  
he was longe in serchyng the countrees that ye haue her-  
de aboue. In this meane whyle Olyuer his felowe was  
allwaye in prysen / with brede and water / and ofte bette  
as he that had neuer hope to departe thens. And desyred  
nothyng but the dethe. As Arthur was on y see for  
to go in to Engiande / there happened a wynde contra-  
ry to arysen on the see / and droue them in to the marches  
that the martyners knewe not atte that presente tyme.  
But whan that they had longe beholden & sene it / they

Oly.

M.ij.

apperceyued that it was one of the countrees and realmes of Irelande the ferdest from þ of Englande. Whan Arthur herde saye that it was one of the realme of Irelande he prayed them that they wolde set hym a lande for as hym semyd as sone myght he here tydynges of þ whiche he soughte as in another countree so as he dyde by the wyll of god euen so as ye shall here. Whā Arthur was on grounde he wente on fote in praynge our lord for to adresse hym on his waye. He was well the space of two monethes in that countree. And whan he wolde haue any thyng he muste make some sygne or elles they coude not vnderstande hym. He hadde neyther hors nor mule for to ryde on / wherfore he wente on fote and soo longe he wente that on a daye he founde hymselfe in a thicke forest in the whiche dyuers wylde beestes dydde remayne. They had wel made hym sygne that he sholde not entre in to that forest but he had not vnderstonden them. He wente all the daye alonge the forest withoute fyndyng of any aduenture. The nyght toke hym wherfore it was force to hym for to slepe. And whan it came vpon the morowe / he put hym on þ waye ryght euylly broken his faste. And he had not longe gone whan he apperceyued a grete and an horryble lyon strongly oppresyd with hongre. For he had founde no praye of longe tyme. Wherfore whan Arthur sawe and apperceyued that he came towarde hym he appareyllled hym for to fyghte for he was armed at all poyntes and also he had a good swerde. He toke of his mauntell and wounde it aboute his arme and then he drew out his swerde and kylled the hyltes in recommaundyng hym to god and wete towarde the lyon that doubted hym but lytell. For whā it came to approche he gaue hym suche a stroke with his



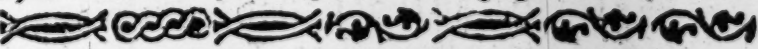

pannes that he rente his cloke / and mo than a hondreth  
 mayles of his haubergon. And it was force to Arthur  
 for to fall to the erthe / but as a valyaunt knyght he gate  
 hym on his fere. And incontynent he began for to assayll  
 the lyon ryght asprety. And whan the lyon felte hymself  
 hurte / he began for to caste a crye so meruaylous that  
 all þ forest dyde ryng of it. And Arthur recouered ano  
 ther stroke / and sette it so well on that he smote of his he  
 de / and so the lyon deyed.

¶ How Arthur beyng in the forest was assaylled of  
 another meruaylous beest / of the whiche he was byc  
 toyous.





**A**S Arthur saide that he was deliuered of þ  
lyon/he thāked god with a meke herte / and  
whan it came vnto þ nyght and that he foun  
de hym not out of the forest / noo more than  
yf he hadde not remeuyd out of one place / he  
was moche dyspleasaunt / as he that of all the daye had  
not eten / but his comforte was whan he thoughte vpon  
saynt Iohan Baptyst that lyued by rotes / and hym ses  
myd that he sholde be ryght melchaunt yf he myght not  
lyue with suche vytaylles for a space of tyme. So he be  
gan for to serche aboute the forest / and began for to cete  
herbes and rotes suche as he founde by so grete appetys  
te for hongre / that he had neuer eten capon in his coun  
tree that had iemed hym so good. And whan the nyghte  
came he put hym on a lytell tree / for drede of dombe beest  
tes. Then within the nyght whan the mone was fayre  
and clere / he herde a thyng come a ferte that made soo  
grete a noyse that it was a hydeous thyng to here for  
in his waye he smote downe all that he mette to the erth  
And whysted so hie that it thughe perced Arthurs  
eres. The whic he whā he herde that meruayll / he begā  
for to blysse hym / in recommaundyng hym vnto god.  
praynge hym for to be his defendour agaynst that beest  
that he saide comynge. And euen so as he recommaun  
ded hym to god / this meruaylous beest came towarde þ  
tree that he was mounted on / and smote the tree with  
his taylor so empyteously that he fell downe to the erthe /  
Whan the poore Arthur founde hymselfe on the groun  
de / yf that he had fere and drede I am nothyng amer  
uaylled / and I thynke well that he wolde haue be in his  
countree agayne with a good wyll. But as a valyaunte  
knyght he prayed god that he wolde haue mercy on his

soule. For he thought that his iaire daye had ben comen  
and sette hande to his swerde for to defende hym / yf the  
beest assaylled hym. For he had no wyll for to deliuer y  
fyrst assaunte the beest was passed wherof Arthur was  
ryght Joyous / but within a whyle the beest retorned to  
warde hym agayne in enuyronnyng hym. **¶** Then he ma  
de hym to tozue thre or foure toznes / and made hym for  
to fall agaynst a tree so harde that it lacked but lytell that  
the herte of the valyaunt Arthur dyde byrste. **¶** Arthur  
was not so soone vp but that the beest was besyde hym  
and he as wyse lenyd agaynst a tree. And whan y beest  
thought for to haue smyten hym / he smote y tree / wher  
fore he endommaged hym but lytell or nought. But her  
terthe was longe and cuttyng meruaylously / wherewith  
she straped hym in suche wyse that yf it hadde not ben  
the tree that he helde hym by / he sholde nothyng haue  
resysted. For alreedy he was so sore wounded that he had  
nothyng on hym but that it was perced. He reuenged  
hym valyauntly and gaue hym grete and sadde strokes  
but she hadde so harde a skynne that in no wyse he mys  
ght domage it. The synke of her alonely greued Ar  
thur as moche as all the remenaunt. The whiche whan  
he sawe the beest that for nothyng that he had done she  
was as freshe as she was at the begynnyng of the med  
lunge / he began for to re clayme our lord / in praynge hys  
that he wolde haue pyte on his creature / and sayd. **¶** Ha  
my ryght swete lord and felowe by the cause I shall fy  
nysh here my lyfe / but and I hadde sene the afore my  
dethe. I sholde ende the surplus of my lyfe with a bet  
ter wyll.   




**How** Arthur lyenge in the woode all hurte / appe-  
 red to hym an guncpente knyght the whiche helyd hy /  
 and after tolde vnto hym the place where as Mpyuet  
 was prysoner in. Capitulo. lvi.



**A** complaynyng he hym the beest kepte hym soo  
 straitlye that he smote hym downe to the erthe  
 vnder hym / and helde hym so fast with his nay-  
 les that all that he had holde of was in pyeces /  
 in suche wyse that Arthur myght not remeue  
 hym. For all that oure lord the whiche neuer forgeteth

his frendes at theyr nede / forgate not this gētyll knygh-  
te / nor wolde not suffre the losse of hym. For þe beest that  
helde hym so straytlye / lete goo her holde that she helde  
with her feete / for to take hym with the tethe to deuour  
re hym / but whan Arthur felte his armes delyuered / he  
that had yet his swerde smote hym vnder the nakyll / the  
whiche was not so harde as the backe / and thurstyd hym  
to the herte. And whan the beest felte hym wounded / in  
castyng a grete crye lete hym fall to the erthe. And Ar-  
thur that felte hym delyuered / gaue hym so many stros-  
kes that he slewe hym. It was not longe after that the  
daye came / but that recomforted hym nothyng for he  
myght not from one place / as he that abode but he des-  
te / bycause of the woundes that he had receyued. And  
thus as he was in daūger as ye haue herde / yet agayne  
he herkened towarde the forest / and apperceyued a thy-  
ge comyng towarde hym / whertore he thoughte better  
to haue ben dedd than afoze. Therfore he sayd / Kyghte  
glorious byrgyn Mary be myn aduocate / and that ye  
wyl to daye present my ppoze soule afoze the face of thy  
blessyd sone. For I se well that the houre is comen that  
I must departe out of this worlde. That thyng appo-  
ched moze nerer and nerer. And whan he was all moost  
at hym. Arthur knewe þe it was a man clothed in whyte  
whiche began for to saye Kyng of Algarbe god salueth  
the. And whan Arthur herde hym named kyng / he ma-  
de the sygne of the crosse and sayd vnto hym / arte thou a  
thyng of the other worlde. I thynke þe thou arte trans-  
mysed from god / syth that by hym thou hast salued me.  
For otherwyle thou coude not haue knowen my name /  
And therfore I praye the that thou haue pyte on me / &  
that thou do so meche that I may be aledged of my hurt

Oly.

R.I.

tes/and that I maye be put out of this forest wherin I  
haue had so moche to suffre. This man answered to hy  
Arthur thou hast not fayled for to say that I am of god  
For so it is. And thynke that I am comen for your aled  
gemente. Then he alyghted of his hors / and sette hym  
downe on the erthe bekynde hym / & drew out of his pur  
se a boxe of golde full of precyous oyntementes / with y  
whiche oyntement he anoynted and touched all his wou  
des / and gaue hym a rote for to ete. And incontynente  
as he hadde tasted of it / he was as hole and safe as cuer  
he hadde ben. Wherfore his medecyne clothed in whyte  
dyde bydde hym that he sholde thanke god / by whome  
he was sente theder. Arthur dyde so as he had comaun  
ded hym / and gaue louynges to god. Thenne the whyte  
man made hym for to moue vpon his hors bekynde hy  
and sayd to hym that he sholde put hym out of the forest  
And then in goynge he sayd to hym. Kyng of Algarbe/  
I knowe well wherfore that thou arte departed out of  
thy countree. It is for to seke Olyuer of Castyle thy fe  
lowe wherfore I shall tell you tydynges. Knowe that  
after his departynge he arryued in the realme of Engla  
de / where as he hath governed hym so well that by his  
prowesse he hath wonne y onely doughter of the kyng  
the which is one of the fayrest ladyes of the worlde / but  
a myschap is fortunid to hym / for a kyng of Irelande the  
whiche loued hym not / by cause he had slayne his fader /  
hath taken hym prouider / and hath put hym in a don  
geon / where as he suffreth as moche mysery as ony man  
is possyble for to suffre. But haue no doubte of his lyfe.  
For he shall neuer deye vnto the tyme that thou hast cal  
ten hym out / and yf that I had to counsayll the / and y  
thou wolde beleue me / I wolde counsayll the for to go



fyfte to London for to comforte the kynge and his doughter. For thou knowest that thou resemblest Olyuer / & that it is all one thyng / wherfore Helayne shall thynke that thou arte her lord / and shall guarrysse bycause of thy comynge / and truly yf that thou haste the not thou shalt neuer se her / for she is lyke vnto the deie / go and lye with her to the ende that they belyue the better that thou arte Olyuer / but beware the well thou thynke not on bylanye / nor dyshonoure / for thou shoide offende to gretely. And after that thou seest her in y waye of helthe departe the and come vnto this forest / for thou shalt here thynges of me here. In these deuyces he ledde hym out of the woode / and made hym descende / then Arthur sette hym on his knees / as afoze a holy thyng and thanked hym / but incontynent he lost the syght of hym with out knowynge where he became.

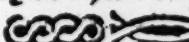
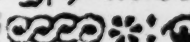
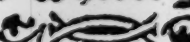


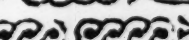
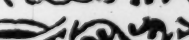
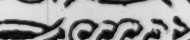

How Arthur by the counsayll of the whyte knyght wente towarde the kynge of Englande at London / And of the Joye that they made hym thys kynge that it hadde ben Olyuer. Capitulo. lviij.

**A**s Arthur founde hym alone in his waye / he thanked god / and dyde so meche that he came to the see / where as he founde a shyp that wente in to Englande / and entred in to it / & whan he was in Englade / the fyrst towne y he entred in was Byrystowe / where as he was knowen for Olyuer. And incontynent the tytynges were spred all aboute. And some adzessyd them vnto London / and Oly.

R.ij.



came and tolde the kynge. The whiche whan he knewe  
it / he was so replenysched with Joye / and his herte soo  
close with Joye / that he hadde letten hymselfe fall to p  
erthe / yf some of his seruantes had not susteyned hym  
but for all that they must bere hym to bedde / where as  
he was a space of tyme without ony knowlege. Neuer  
theless he felle a slepe / and whan he was awaked he de  
maunded of them of his chambze yf it were true that O  
lyuer was alyue / and yf he dyde come. They answered  
hym yf / wherof he was ryght gladde / and thanked god  
but afore he knewe not whether that they had tolde it hy  
or yf that he had dremed it. Thus as they were in these  
deuyles came a squire and knocked at the chambze doze  
that sayd that they sholde axe the kynge yf he wolde sce  
Olyuer / the whiche wolde come shortly / for he was not

more thā a myle of. The kynge sente sone for his hoxses  
 and mounted vpon hym/for to goo agaynst hym. In ly:  
 ke wyse euery body wente in to the felde / for to se hym  
 that was so moche desyred. And whan Arthur apper:  
 ceued the people that came agaynst hym / the teares we:  
 re in his eyen / and began for to bewaile his felowce. And  
 dyde so moche that he approached the kynge / and whan h  
 kynge apperceued hym that he had not sene of thre ye:  
 re before / hym semeth that it is none other but Olyuer  
 and also to al the other of his companye / wherfore with  
 bothe his armes abrode he ranne to hym / and beganne  
 for to embrace hym so strongly that it was meruayl but  
 he myght not speke one worde to hym. And whan that  
 he myght speke / he sayd that he was ryght welcome / &  
 that he had done grete almelle for to retozne and comfor:  
 te this realme that was so replenyshed with dolour by:  
 cause of his departynge. Arthur answered to hym. My  
 lord that the whiche hath ben done / was done agaynst  
 my wyll / nor other thyng I maye not saye / but by the  
 pleasure of god I shall geue more Joye and lyelle vnto  
 this realme bycause of my retozninge / than euer there  
 was sorowe for my departynge. And am more redy for  
 to do you seruyce than euer I haue ben. Wherof I doo  
 thanke god.      
    

**H**ow Arthur came and bysytte Helayne / the  
 whiche hadde wende h he had ben Olyuer her  
 husbnde / and of the solempnyte that was ma:  
 de. And howe that he laye with her withouten  
 bylance. Capitulo.

lxxxij.

      
 Oly. R. l.





**A**fter these deuyles Arthur salued the noble  
men that were in the knyghtes companye / and  
generally al the other / but there came so ma  
ny / that it was not possyble for them for to  
entre in to y cyte. Wherfore it was force for  
them for to brynge a grete and a hye charre of Cypres /  
vpon the whiche Arthur mounted / to the ende that he  
were sene on euery syde / for to contente the people y bet  
ter. Then it was cryed that euery body sholde retozne / &  
after Arthur mounted vpon horsbacke. And whan he  
entred in to London / none can not deuyle to you the Jo  
ye that was made on euery syde / y stretes were hanged

ladyes and damoyelles were at the wydowes / the noy  
se was so grete that it was meruayll for to here. And in  
sygne of moze gretter Joye / bothe moze and lesse cryed  
Te deum laudamus. And whan they approched the pa  
lays Helayne that was strongly syke / herde þe noyse whe  
re as she laye / and demaunded what it was / but none  
durst not tether / for fere lest that the sodayne Joye shol  
de haue ben to grete. Wherfore they abode the maystres  
that dyde tell a ferre what it was. Whan she knewe it w  
her handes Joyned vp to heuen she beganne for to than  
ke god in saynge. O redemptour of humayne lygnage I  
rendre to the graces and thankes / whan that afore my  
dethe I maye se hym that hath put me in soo grete do  
loure. Come now derthe whan that thou wylte / for I  
shall abyde the Joyously / syth that I knowe that my so  
uerayne lord is comen / it can not greue me. The sayre  
and good Helayne hadde grete talent for to see hym that  
she wende hadde ben her huibande / but Arthur was in  
grete thought how he myght demeane hym towarde þe  
wyse of his felowe. For all that whan his botes were ot  
he wente towarde Helayne for to knowe how she dyde /  
And whan she sawe hym / she was a grete whyle or that  
she myght speke. But whan that she myghte speke / she  
sayd that she dydde well syth that she sawe hym in good  
helthe. Theoure of souper came / and therfore Arthur  
toke leue of her / and prayed her that she wolde make go  
de chere / and that she wolde thynke for to make her hole  
The ladyes and damoyelles of the cyte of London we  
re somoued to souper / & there was made a meruaylous  
Joye / but yet it sholde haue be moze gretter yf it hadde  
not ben for Helaynes maladye. And it was defended by  
the kynge that none sholde werke of viij. dayes but eche

Oly.

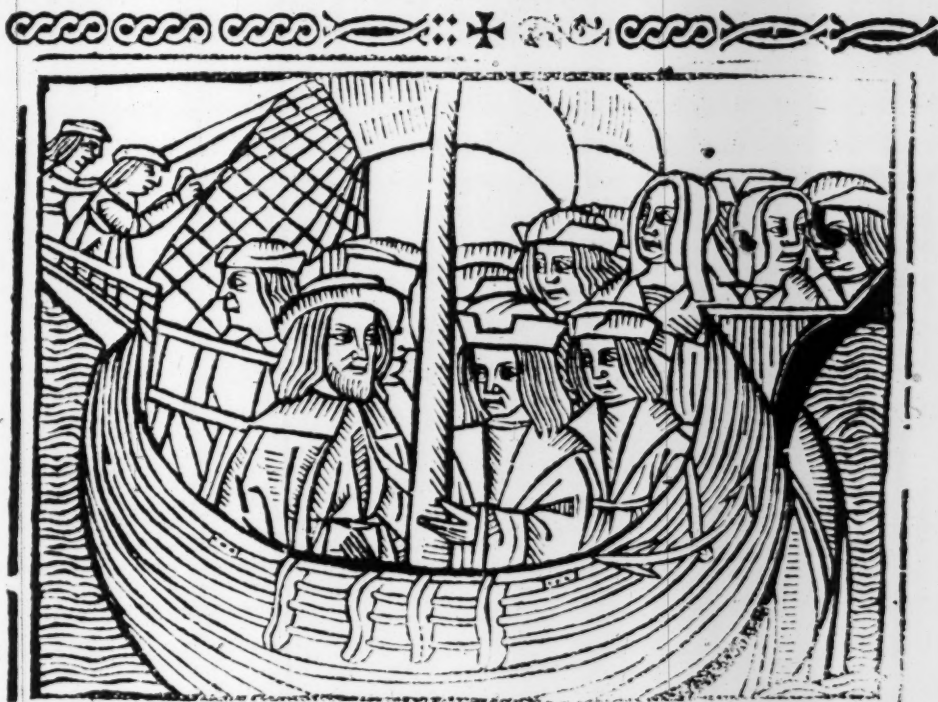
R. liij.

anenst hym made the feest as grete as they myght. Ar-  
 thur by the counsayll of the medecyns / was excused for  
 to lye with Helayne bycause of her maladye / wherof he  
 was Joyous without makynge any semblaunt / but w<sup>h</sup>  
 in shorte space she gate bp and founde guaryson & helth  
 And so m<sup>o</sup>che that within a lytell tyme the physycyens  
 gaue hym leue for to lye with her / soo as he dydde. And  
 whan he was in bedde with her / he remeuyd not oute of  
 his place / but the fayre Helayne dyde not so / for she that  
 of longe tyme had not had the embrasyng of her lord /  
 begā for to approche / but Arthur drew backe and sayd  
 to her / my loue withdrawe you in to your place agayne  
 for I haue made auowe that neuer by embracyng / nor  
 otherwyle I shall touche your body tyll that I haue pa-  
 yed a pylgrimage that I haue promysed vnto saynt Ja-  
 mes / wherfore I praye you that ye be contente / and af-  
 ter I shall come to you agayne / for as sone as I may I  
 wyll paye it / and after by the grace of god we shal make  
 good chere. Helayne herynge Arthurs wordes dyde his  
 comaundement In saynge to hym that it was well rea-  
 son for to holde that whiche he had promysed to god and  
 to Saynt James. Then she began for to deuyse a ferre  
 with hym / in demaundyng hym where as he had ben /  
 Arthur badde her that she sholde not speke to hym / for  
 she myght not knowe it / wherfore Helayne departed her  
 at that tyme.



¶ How Arthur vnder the vmbre for to goo to Saynt  
 James / departed for to fynde his felowe Olyuer / &  
 of the whyte knyght that ledde hym nere where as he  
 was. Capitulo.





**I**n suche estate was Arthur well the space of a  
 moneth / he in the kynge of Englandes courte the  
 whiche made hym as good chere and honoure.  
 as he wolde haue done to Olyuer / thynkynge  
 that it hadde ben he / and also dyde Helayne / &  
 all the other. And whan he sawe that Helayne had cuer  
 comen her maladye / and that there was no moze dauns  
 ger / he came towarde þe kynge and sayd to hym that he  
 dyde owe a byage to Saynt James / and that he muste  
 nedes do it withouten ony companye / wherfore he praz  
 yed hym that he wolde be contente that he myght go alo  
 ne / and that he wolde retozne agayne as shortly as he  
 myghte. The kynge asked hym yf that he was wery of  
 his wyfe alreedy / and he answered nay. After he toke his




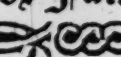
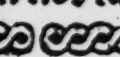
leue of the kynge for to departe / and on the morowethe  
kynge prayed hym that he wolde not tary / and also that  
he sholde take some company w<sup>th</sup> hym / but Arthur wol-  
de not do nothyng / and so departed all alone after that  
he had taken his leue of the fayre Helayne / and promy-  
sed her that he sholde retozne ryght shortly. He dyde soo  
moche that he arryued in the forest where as he had fou-  
den the whyte knyght. Neuertheles he durst not entre /  
for fere of the wylde beestes / and therfore he abode the  
trouthe of his knyght there. And he was there soo longe  
that he apperceyued h<sup>is</sup> comyng. Then Arthur salued  
hym / and he rendred to hym his salute. Thene he made  
hym to mounthe vpon behynde hym / and sayd to hym. My  
frende Arthur hast thou good wyll for to haue agayne  
thy felow / darest thou put the in auenture for to recouer  
hym. Truly sayd Arthur there is nothyng but that I  
wolde do it for to recouer hym. Now I shall tell y<sup>e</sup> sayd  
y<sup>e</sup> knyght / thou arte armed at all pyeces / wherfore thou  
ought to be the more hardy. I aduertise the that the  
kynge that holdeth Olyuer in pryson / is a good myle fro  
his place with a lytell company. There is from heng the  
der. xxxiii. myle / and there is but thre knyghtes with h<sup>is</sup>  
all a fote / but and I thought that thou durst fyght with  
them all foure for to gete agayne thy frende. I sholde le-  
de the theder in a lytell space. Arthur thanked hym / and  
prayed hym that he wolde do so. The knyghte smote y<sup>e</sup>  
hors with the spores / and he had not so lone done it / but  
that in a moment he was there as the kynge was. The  
he shewed hym to Arthur and sayd. Arthur descende as  
downe for yonder is thyn enemye / and yf that thou reco-  
uer Olyuer / tell hym that the knyghte clothed in whyte  
dothe salue hym / the whiche dyde brynge the heder.

**H**ow Arthur toke the kynge that helde his felowe  
in pryslon / and how that he delyuered hym. Ca. lx.

**I**ncontynent Arthur alyght / and toke leue of þ  
knyght / the whiche banysshed sone awaye / &  
Arthur dyde so moche that he appoyched to the  
kynge. And incontynent he escryed hym to the  
dethe / and then he sette hande to his swerde &  
gaue one of his knyghtes suche a stroke / that he cloue hys  
to the tethe. The seconde he smote of his harme and his  
sholder. The thyrde he kest downe deed. The kynge had  
but a shorte dager wherwith he defended hym valyauntlye  
but in the ende he fledde / and Arthur folowed hym  
& gaue hys so grete a stroke with the platte of his swerde  
that he smote hym downe astonyed / & then he sayd to hys  
A fals traytour kynge / thou canst not denye but that þ  
hast the kynge in thy pryslon / wherfore enforce the for to  
rendre hym to me / or elles I make auowe to god I shall  
smyte of thy heed. The kynge cryed hym mercy and sayd /  
O noble knyght saue my lyfe and I shall rendre hym to  
the agayne. Arthur promysed hys that he wolde saue his  
lyfe / so that he wolde sende hym to hym incontynent / &  
that he wolde promyse hym to lette them go safe. The  
kynge promysed hym that he wolde do so. And then he  
departed all mate / and dyscomfyted / and he dyde so mo  
che that he came in to his castell. And incontynent as he  
was there / he commaunded that Olyuer sholde be dra  
wen out. Whan Olyuer was afoze hym he sayd. Kynge  
I pray the that thou slee me afoze that I entre in agayn  
in pryslon. The kynge sayd to hym that it wente not soo /  
for a knyght hath acquyrted thy pryslon / and I promys  
ed hym to sende the to hym. Thene he badde gyue hym



newe clothes / so as it was done / and then he gaue hym  
leue / but at the departynge he said. Olyuer I se my des  
the approche / syth that I delyuer the / and I haue well  
deserued it. Neuertheles pf prayer maye haue place. I  
beseeche the for to pardō me. Olyuer that was more sym  
pler than a mayden / sayd to hym. My frende that that  
ye haue done to me / hathe ben withouten cause / for all y  
I promyse you that as for me I shall neuer tell no body  
of the Iniurye that ye haue done to me / but & it be kno  
wen by other / & that some make you warre / I wyll not  
helpe you. The kynge thāked hym and sayd that he wol  
de abyde tyll than. They mounted bothe on one hors all  
alone withouten other companye. And wente so moche  
that they founde Arthur. Olyuer knewe hym sooner  
than Arthur dyde hym. Wherfore he set fote on groun  
de and ranne to hym with stratched armes and embras  
ced hy. Who that hadde sene the knowlege of these two  
faythful felowes / he sholde haue had a harde herte pf he  
hadde not wepte. They helde eche other embraced with  
out ony speche. Olyuer seyng his felowe that myghte  
not speke / he had his herte so full of Joye and pyte that  
he myght do nothynge but kysse hym and colle hym. On  
the other syde Arthur that sawe y fayre face in whiche  
the ladyes toke theyr solace for to beholde it so pale with  
pysonynge where as he hadde ben in / hadde not lesse sor  
rowe than Olyuer. For all that he was the fyrst that spa  
ke and sayd. My ryght swete lord & felowe / this Jour  
neye hathe ben sore despyred on my partye. I gyue louyn  
ges to god that I haue founde you. A whyte knyght has  
the brought me hether / the whiche salueth you / & char  
ged me to tell it you. Olyuer answered hym. Arthur my  
broder by your bouite & loyalte ye haue done so moche for

me / that I can neuer rendre you to guerdon. I praye  
to god that he rendre you the rewarde for I am not suf  
fycient for to do it.     

**H**ow Olyuer and Arthur departed frome the real  
me of Irlande / and toke theyr waye towarde Lon  
don. And how Olyuer by Ire kest Arthur downe of  
his hors / bycause that he hadde layne with his wyfe.  
Capitulo. lxi.



His notwithstandinge that they bothe shold  
haue done dyspleasure to the kynge of Irlā  
de that was there present / for all that he syn  
ge the knowlege and loue that they shewed /  
demaunded theym yf that they wolde that he

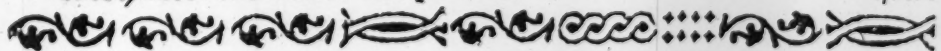
holde gyue to eche of theym a good courser / but thenne  
they sayd naye / but and he wolde gyue to them the hors  
that he rode on / he sholde do them a grete pleasure / and  
that it sholde luffe at that tyme for them bothe. The  
kyngg sayd that he was content / and gaue hym theym  
These tweyne mounted vpon hym / and Arthur rode a-  
fore / for he was a lytell wounded. And so they put them  
on the waye / and dyde soo moche that they arriued in  
Englande. But afore that they were there ye maye well  
thynke that they had dyuers wordes togyder / and eche  
of them demaunded of others tydynge. Whan they ca-  
me in to Englande Olyuer shaued his berde to be y<sup>e</sup> mos-  
te gentyller But they wolde haue none other hors / but  
that same that they were comen on / and concluded to tell  
the trouthe of theyr aduenture / without declarynge the  
place of his prysone ment / and also without gyuyng any  
knowlege of whens they were / nor whome. And they of  
Englande were all abasshed to se these two men vpon  
one horse / & semblable. And sayd that Olyuer had brou-  
ghte one of his brederne fro saynt James / but they cou-  
de not knowe whiche was Olyuer. Thus as ye may he-  
re the two felowes approached within a myle of London  
And soo as they deuyfed Olyuer demaunded Arthur yf  
euer he hadde ben at London. And he sayd ye more than  
a monethe / by the counsayll of the whyte knyght / for to  
comforte the kyng / and the lordes of the realme / and al-  
so for to gyue helthe vnto Helayne his wyfe / the whiche  
at that presente tyme was syke vnto the dethe / and that  
he hadde made them for to beleue that he was Olyuer /  
Olyuer demaunded hym howe that he hadde gouerned  
hym towarde his wyfe. And Arthur sayd to hym that he  
hadde layne with her. And whā Olyuer these herde ty-



dynges/ he put out of remembraunce the seruyce that his  
 felowe hadde done vnto hym / and as hastye and full of  
 furour/ he kest Arthur downe that was mounted afore  
 hym/ so rudely without more enquerŷge/ that he brake  
 one of his legges in fallynge. Then he lepte in to the sa-  
 dell and passed forth on his waye without retournyng  
 hym/ or makynge semblaunt of ony thyng/ and whan he  
 was passed he wist not what he sholde do for to retorne  
 and see hym. But he thought with in hymselfe that he  
 sholde mysdo to grete/ seynge the loue that hadde ben  
 afore tyme bytwene them. And also þe grete seruyce that  
 he had done for hym/ as to haue taken hym oute of that  
 place so full of myserye/ from whiche he sholde neuer ha-  
 ue departed yf he had not ben. Wherfore he cōcluded þe  
 for all these seruyces he wolde leue hym his lyfe/ but this  
 was not but that he thought that he hadde done his wyll  
 with his wyfe/ and gaue hymselfe meruayle howe that  
 in so noble a herte myght lodge so moche treason. \*\*



How Olyuer demaunded grete sorowe for the dys-  
 pleasure that he had doone vnto Arthur his felowe  
 withouten cause. Capitulo. lxii.



Olyuer rode longe in these thoughtes. And  
 whan he came to the courte/ and that the  
 tydynges came to the kynge/ and to Helay-  
 ne that Olyuer was comen agayne/ they  
 were all abashed/ for they knewe well that  
 in so shorte a space as he hadde be out that he coude not  
 haue ben there. Neuerthelesse they were ryght gladd &



Joyous. And the kynge made hym grete chere whā he  
 sawe hym. But with payne he coude knowe hym by cau  
 se he was so lene / and demaunded hym what sykenes he  
 had syth his departynge / and who had put hym in suche  
 estate. For as hym semyd he sawe neuer man so soze cha  
 unged in so shorte space. And Olyuer sayd to hym that  
 neuer syth his departynge he had had helthe. Fayze sone  
 sayd the Kynge ye be comen in to this countree for to  
 helpe you. And then he demaunded hym why he hadde  
 not ben at saynt James / as he had tolde them at his des  
 partynge. Olyuer sawe weil that his felowe had made  
 them to bpleue at his departynge that he wente to saynt  
 James / wherfore he sayd. My lord my malydye hathe

hath letted me/and yf it please god / whan that I am  
hole I may do it better with myn ease/and with gretter  
company. whan it came after souper/he toke the sonest  
leue of the kynge that he myght/as he that hadde grete  
wyl for to lye with his wyfe the whiche was so excellen  
te / and that of lōge tyme he had not sene hēt to whome  
he coude none euill wyl of ony thyng that was happen  
ned her/nor that his felowe had done. For he knowe wel  
that she coude not do withall/and that ygnorance ma  
de her for to do it thynkynge that it had ben he. whan he  
was a bedde with his wyfe/he began for to colle her and  
kysse her/wherof she was all abashed & sayd. My lord  
ye haue forgotten the promesse that ye made to Saynt  
James Olyuer demaunded her what it was/and how  
quod she / doo ye not thynke on that ye haue layne with  
me moze than a monethe withouten touchynge of me /  
and that of all that whyle I myght not haue of you one  
onely kysse/and ye tolde me that it myght not be tel that  
your byage were done I haue herde you saye that ye ha  
ue not ben there/and therfore I praye you my dere lor  
de yf that ye haue promysed ony thyng to god / that ye  
wyl holde it. Olyuer demaunded her of euery thyng so  
ferforthe / that he appercepued the loyalte of his felowe  
wheretoze tenderly wepyng he withdrew hym abacke  
from his wyfe / and of all that nyght he slepte not / but  
sayd to hymselfe that he was the moost unhappye / that  
euer was borne of moder. And that the euellcs and try  
bulacyons that he had endured had not doone hym the  
hondreth parte of dy spleasure that he had at that present  
tyme And sayd that and his felowe had ony hurte / that  
he sholde neuer haue Joye and that yf he were deed that  
he sholde slee hymselfe / for had well deseruyd it.

Oly.

O. J.



How Olyuer departed from London and came to  
the place where as he had lefte his felowe / and cryed  
hym mercy. Capitulo. lxiii.

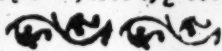


**B**eyndently he abode in that doloure and dys-  
trasse tyll it was daye / and incontynente as it  
was daye he arose & made to sadell his hors  
vpon y<sup>e</sup> which he mounted and dyde so mo-  
che / that he arryued in y<sup>e</sup> place where as he  
had lefte Arthur / and whan he founde hy<sup>e</sup> not he began  
for to serche hym on euery syde / and as he wente heder /  
and theder / he herde towarde the wood a voyce that com-  
playned hym ryght bytterly / wherfore he wente theder-  
warde. And whan he approached nere there / he knewe y<sup>e</sup>  
it was his felowe / that with ryght grete payne had with-  
drawen hym oute of the waye vnder a tree. And whan  
Olyuer sawe hym he set fote on grounde. And truly he  
had soo grete doloure that he myght not susteyne hy<sup>e</sup> self  
And I thynke yf that god had not helped hym / that he  
had fallen in dyspayre / and smytten hymselfe thurgh y<sup>e</sup>  
body with his swerde that he hadde drawen oute. And  
the fyrste worde that he sayd to his felowe was suche in-  
castyng hymselfe on his knees afore hym / with the na-  
ked swerde in his hande. ¶ Alas my broder beholde this  
caytyfe in pyte / the whiche hath so greuously offended  
the / wherfore take this swerde and slewe me / & with all  
my herte I pardon the / for the surplus of my lyfe shall  
be in dystresse and sorowe. Arthur sernge his felowe so  
meke hym towarde hym sayd. My ryght dere broder / &  
loyall felowe I praye to god that he pardon you / and I  
doo. And thynke that it is a thyng moze possyble for to

deuyde all the thynges that god hathe made than to de-  
parte the loue of vs twayne / tyll tye dethe. Whan Oly-  
uer herde hym speke so hūbly / he wolde gladly haue ben  
deed. And coude not tell what to do saue to wepe perfoū-  
dely besyde hym. Wherfore Arthur prayed hym for to lo-  
ke how that he myght be hadde thens / for h<sup>e</sup> sul<sup>d</sup> be / &  
had suffred the nyghte afore so moche dolour bycause of  
his hurte that it was meruayll. And then Olyuer axed  
hym yf that he myght abyde so longe / tyll that he hadde  
ben at a lytell byllage nere them for to fetch a charette /  
Arthur sayd y<sup>e</sup> / and prayed h<sup>e</sup> for to h<sup>e</sup> hym Olyuer  
wente and made suche dyligence y<sup>e</sup> within a shorte spā-  
ce he brought one / vpon the whiche he put hym / and in  
this wyse he was brought to Lōdon sore syke / and Oly-  
uer was in it also for to bere hym companye. And made  
for to be g<sup>u</sup>en hym a house / and seruautes. After that  
this was done Olyuer made all the kynges physycyens  
and surgyens for to come / the whiche put Arthur in pos-  
ynt. And they dyde so moche that within shorte tyme he  
wente aboute the chamb<sup>er</sup>. Olyuer that dyspyted hym of  
ten tolde to his wyfe how euery thyng wente / and had  
ben / and that by the space of a moneth another man had  
layne with her / the whiche was all abalshed / and swo<sup>r</sup>e  
to hym that in no maner of the worlde he had not tou-  
ched her / not as moche as to kysse her. The kyng in lyke  
wyse dyde demaunde of Olyuer what maner a man he  
was / that he hadde brought in suche wyse theder. And  
Olyuer sayd vnto hym that it was one of his good felo-  
wes / the whiche hadde ben noutysshed with hym sythe  
his yongthe. And thenne Olyuer beganne for to recoū-  
te vnto the kyng of Englande / the grete loyalte / and al-  
so loue that he had to hym / & in lyke wyse how y<sup>e</sup> he had

Oly.

O.ij.

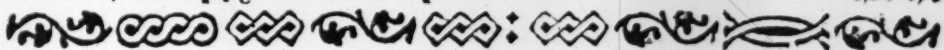
layne with his wyfe and the maner how that he had con-  
 ducted hym and after the payne / & trauayle that he had  
 suffred for to put hym out of pryson where as he was in  
 And of the grete balrairyses that he hadde done for that  
 cause then he recounted the pyteous guerdon & rewarde  
 that he had gyuen hym wherefore he prayed the kynge  
 that he wolde honour hym as moche or more than hym  
 selfe. For he was more worthy it than he. 





How Arthur after that he was heled passed ouer  
see and had vengeance on the kynge that had kepte  
Olyuer prysoner. Capitulo.

liiii.



**T**he kynge was gretely abashed / and sayd y  
it was one of the meruaylous hystories that  
euer he hadde herde / & sayd to Olyuer that  
he coude neuer do hy so moche honour / but  
that he ought to doo hym more / and also yf y  
he loued hym wel / he sholde do nothyng but that he ou  
ghte to do. For neuer broder had done for another that y  
he had done for hym / wherfore he coude not to moche de  
serue it. And that as touchyng his parte he wolde doo  
hym as moche honour as sholde be possyble to hym / and  
sente for his chamberlayne / and his mayster stwarde /  
and other gouernours / and commaunded them that su  
che and semblable estate as his sone Olyuer had / sholde  
be gyuen to Arthur. And began for to tell them all along  
ge that y whiche Olyuer had reherfed to hym / reserued  
that he made no mencyon how that Arthur hadde layne  
with his doughter / y whiche was not a thyng for to re  
counte / for it was a desloyalte / but the kynge kepte hym  
well from tellyng of it / bycause that there was / and is  
many folke / y paraueture wolde sooner haue thoughte  
euill than good / wherfore he depoyted hym. After the  
kynge's commaundement all thynges were ordeyned as  
he had deuysed. And dyuers knyghtes and squyres wes  
re reteyned of Arthurs housholde / the whiche began for  
to gete bp / and the kynge bysytte hym ryght often. Al  
so dyde the fayre Helayne / that made no semblaunce of  
nothyng. And soo moche passed on these thynges that


Oly.

Oly.

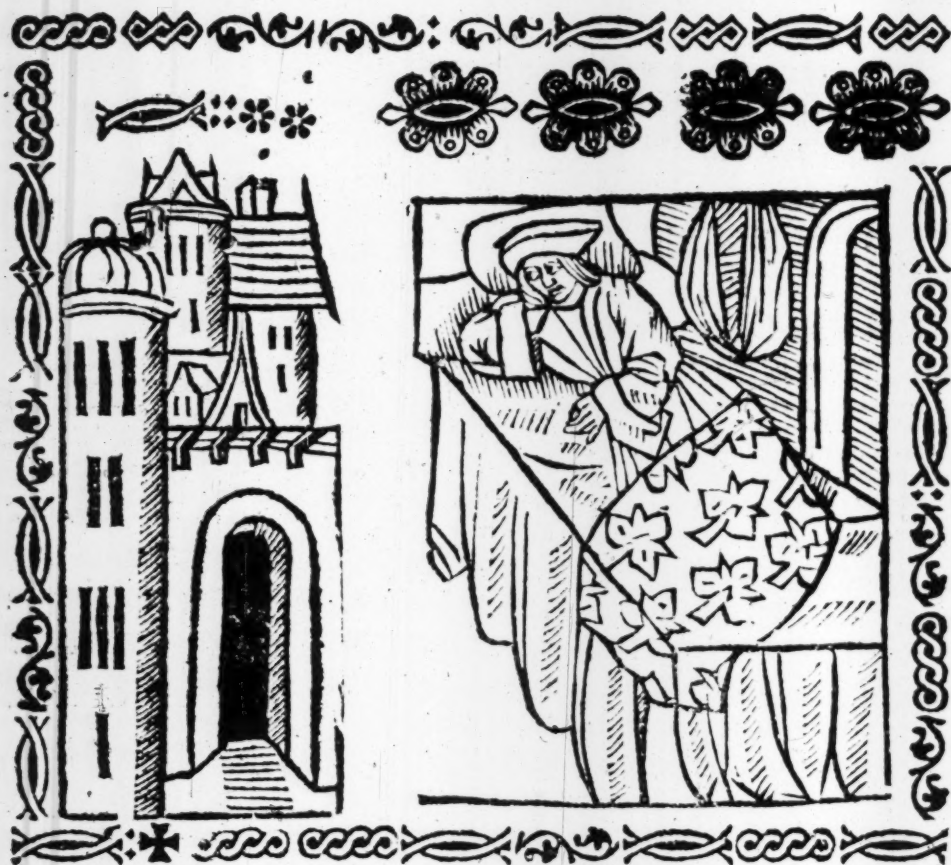
Arthur was heled. And whan it came þ he myghte walke  
ke aboute in the courte / and haue acqwayntaunce with  
the noble men that remayned therin / euery body began  
for to loue hym / bycauſe of the humblenes that he was  
replete with. And the kynge hymſelf loued hym almoost  
as moch as Olyuer his ſone in lawe. And whā he ſawe  
that he was in the grace of euery body / he forgate not þ  
wronge that the kynge of Irlande hadde done to his fel-  
lowe / wherfore he demaunded hym on a daye yf that he  
hadde any wyll for to auenge hym. And Olyuer ſayd na-  
ye / and ſayd that he had pcedoned hym. And how quod  
Arthur haue ye ſo feble a courage that ye dare not auen-  
ge you on your enemye / by the ſayth that I owe to god /  
it ſhall not abyde ſoo. And then all euyl contente he ca-  
me towarde the kynge / & tolde hym all alonge in what  
pyſon Olyuer hadde ben in / and prayed hym þ he wol-  
de gyue hym men for to auenge Olyuer / for he knewe  
well that Olyuer hadde no talente for to doo it. Whan þ  
the kyng herde Arthur ſpeke ſo / he toke it moze greuouſ-  
ly at his herte than Arthur dydde / wherfore he ſayd to  
hym. My ſayre frende lette my ſone haue his wyll / for it  
may be that he hath made ſome promeſſes afore that he  
yſſued oute of pyſon. Ye be well the man for to auenge  
hym without any moze that he medle hym therof. And  
then the kyng reſed bp a grete armye of þ whiche Ar-  
thur was the chyef Capytayne / the whiche were not ſoo  
ſone arryued in Irlande but that the kynge theyr ene-  
mye the whiche had knowlege of theyr comynge / gaue  
them batayll / where as was ſlayne dyuers men bpōn  
bothe ſydes / but fynally the Iryſſhmen were dyſcomfy-  
ted / and the kynge fledde / & was aſſyeged in one of his  
places / that was not well garnyſhed with bytaylles /

wherfore it myght not holde longe. So whan he sawe y  
 he had noo moze mete / and that it was force for to yelde  
 hym / as a valyaunt man he sayd that he had leuer deye  
 in the felde in auengynge his dethe with the curtynge of  
 his swerde on his enemyes / than for to yelde that they  
 bolente / and prayed the lytell folke that he had for to do  
 well / and then armed them and made to open the gates  
 of th fortresse in smytynge on they enemyes / and slew  
 many at the fyrste bronte / but there was soo many men  
 agaynst them that they coude not escape. And fynally  
 the kynge and all his men were slayne. After his dethe  
 all his realme yelded them / and were contente for to has  
 ue suche a lord as the kynge of Englande wolde assygne  
 them.

How Arthur fell in a grete maladye / and of the dys  
 pleasure that Olyuer had. Capitulo. lxx.


 Hese thynges done Arthur and his company  
 retorned in to Englande / where as they we  
 re fested of the kynge / of Olyuer / and of all o  
 ther lordes. And the kynge gaue Arthur the  
 realme of Irland that he had conquered of  
 newe. And the Iryshmen were sent for / the whiche cas  
 me and dyde hym homage & feate / wherby Arthur was  
 moze puyssaunt tha afoze / but this was not but that he  
 demaunded often of Olyuer what thyng he dydde meue  
 hym y he made hy not to be knowen / for then every ma





wolde haue made hym better chere / and the kyng wolde  
 haue ben ryght Joyous / for to haue maryed his dou-  
 ghter so hyghlye. Notwithstandynge that it suffysed hy  
 Also he tolde hym how that after his departynge his fa-  
 der had neuer Joye / and thought that angre hadde put  
 hym to dethe / wherfore Olyuer wepte ryght strongly  
 for the dethe of his fader / for hym semed yt that he were  
 deed / that it was for his sake / & prayed hym that he wol-  
 de not as ye tell what he was / for it was yet tyme ynou-  
 gh for to make them to be knowen / and that whan that  
 it sholde please them they myght do it. Arthur that wol-  
 de all that his felowe wolde / dydde not dysobey hym in

nothyng. Also Olyuer made to bere moze honour vnto  
hym than to hymselfe / and pleased hym the moost that  
he myght. Truly the two loyall felowes made so many  
nowe thynges that all they of the realme reioysed them.  
All they thoughtes was but for to make good chere and  
Jopous & that the whiche the one wolde the other wol  
de also / and they two hertes were moze agreynge tha  
they semblaunce / that was all one thyng. Thus as ye  
here they passed the tyme in Joy / but fortune that is mo  
der of all trybulacyon had enuye of the goodnes of thes  
se two loyall brederen and perfyte felowes / for in a sho  
rt tyme all they laughynges and Joyes were chaūged  
in to weppynge and lamentacyons / for Arthur was soo  
greuouly syke that the physycens iūged hym but deed  
but he was not so happy for to deye / at euery tyme that  
he wysshed it. His sekenes was without comparyson of  
all them that euer hadde ben sene / for in a maner of wo  
mes descended from his braynes / the whiche etc all his  
face / wherby he was so strongly dysfigured / that there  
was neuer man moze. Out of his body yssued so grete a  
synke / that none myght approche hym saue Olyuer / &  
at euery thyng was aboute hym / and wolde not depar  
te fro hym. He sente for all þe maystres surgens on eue  
ry syde / and prayed theym yf that they coude fynde any  
remedy for his fayre broder that they sholde spare for no  
thyng. And synably none coude put no remedye to it /  
And this sykenes heide Arthur so longe that he was bly  
de. When Olyuer sawe hym so blynde that he seemed bet  
ter deed than alpyue / he mayde ryght grete sorowe / so mo  
che that euery body hadde pyte on hym. Often Olyuer  
sayd vnto Arthur / my broder yf there be any thyng that  
ye knowe that I may do for to helpe you / spare it not for

Oly.

P. 1.

upon my sayth I wolde be the podrest man in the worlde / so that ye had your helthe.

**O**f the dreime and byspon that Olyuer had by four nyghtes / & in lyke wyse it semed to Arthur that his helthe was in the power of Olyuer his felowe / and þe he must do it for to hele hym. Capitulo. lxvj.











**M**y broder and saythfull felowe sayd Arthur ye doo me more good than I haue deserued wherfore I thanke you / and pray you that ye wyll pray to god for to sende dethe to me for and it were his wyll I wolde sayne be out of this myserye. **I**t happened that Olyuer slepte upon a nyghte / and dreamed that it was well possyble to fynde helthe for his felowe. And Arthur dreamed in lyke wyse that it was in Olyuers power for to hele hym / and they had this byspon foure dayes togydcr / wherof Olyuer was sore ameruayled. He came to se his felowe and declared to hym his dreime / and his felowe sayd that dreames were but abusyon / notwithstandinge he tolde hym that by thre dayes he had dreamed / and hym thoughte þe a thyng sayd to hym that he myght hele hym / and none other. Olyuer sayd to hym wolde to god that it were in my power for to hele you / for and I myght do it / ye sholde be shortly hole / or elles I praye to god that he neuer gyue me his paradysse. Whā it came to the nyght and þe Olyuer wente to bedde / he sette hym on his knees afoze his bedde prayng our lorde þe he wolde gyue hym knowlege of that byspon / that soo often tymes had happened












hym. And with this that he wolde tell hym in what ma-  
ner that he myght hele his felowe. Then he layde hym  
downe/and he was not soo sone a slepe but that a voyce  
sayd to hym so hyghe that he awaked. Olyuer thy felow  
may not be heled tyll that he drynke of the blood of two  
Innocētes/ sone and doughter/ the whiche must be slay-  
ne/ and theyr blode medled togyder/ and thenne gyue it  
hym to drynke/ but he must not knowe of it whā he shal  
drynke it/ for and he knewe it he wolde not drynke it for  
nothyng. Whan Olyuer herde this he was al abashed  
and thought for to haue resoned hym ferder forthe / but  
the kynge was gone and sayd nomore. Delayne had her-  
de nothyng of all this. Upon the morowe he wēte to se  
his felowe as he was accustomed/ and axed hym how he  
had done that nyght. Arthur knewe hym by his voyce/  
for he had lost his syght / and prayed hys for to approche  
to hym. And whan he felte hym he embraced hym sayng  
My ryght swete broder ye be my dethe and my lyfe/ for  
a voyce hath tolde me this nyght that it is possyble for  
you to hele me/ nor other thyng coude I not knowe. O-  
lyuer sayd to hym what he wolde well that it were so / &  
then he departed fro thens / and after that he had herde  
masse/ he withdrew hym aparte in to a lytel chambze/  
and began for to thynke on that whiche he had herde on  
the nyght afore / then he sette hym on his knees before  
an ymage of the glorvous byrgyn Marye/ the whiche he  
had of custome for to salve / and began for to saye thus/  
Ryght glorvous byrgyn Marye I praye the that by thy  
pyte thou wylte counsayll this vnhappy. I haue my fe-  
lowe syke the whiche hath done so moche for me that I  
can neuer deserue it. It hath ben sayd to me whethet it  
is by god or not/ that who sholde sle two chyldzen a sone

Oly.

P. 4.

and doughter / and that theyr blode were medled to gyf  
 der / and that it were gyuen hym to drynke / that he shold  
 dehele. Ryght swete lady I haue two chyl dren / a sone &  
 a doughter of kynges blode. ¶ Neuerthelesse yf that I  
 knewe that I shold e not offende the hyghnesse of thy so  
 ne and the / I sholde slee my two chyl dren / for to rendre  
 to my broder his helthe.          

¶ How Olyuer for to gyue helthe & guaryson to his  
 felowe / slewe his two chyl dren for to haue the bloode  
 that Arthur myght drynke it. Capitulo. lxviij.         



**W**hen Olyuer had made thus his cōplaynte  
to þe byrgyn Marye / & that he had had dy  
uers ymagynacyons / as well of the loue þe  
he had to his chyldren / as þe whiche he had  
to his felowe / he concluded for to slee his  
two chyldren for the loue of his felowe / saynge he had  
de nothyng more dere than his felowe / and that þe loue  
that he loued his two chyldren with / was nothyng for  
to compare to that the whiche he loued his felowe with /  
Wherfore he departed fro his chambze / and came in to  
that of his two chyldren. And whan he was entred he cō  
maunded all the ladyes for to auoyde oute / the whiche  
dyde his commaundement. And whan he founde hym  
selte alone he shytted the chambze doze / and bare a basyn /  
and a naked swerde in his hande vnto the bedde of the  
two chyldren the whiche slepte / and were not yet ryfen /  
Whan he approached nere the bedde / he lyfte vp the cou  
erlette / and founde them slepyng ryght swetely. The  
lytell sone that was of þe aegge of .v. yere awaked / and in  
contynente as he sawe Olyuer / nature taught hym for  
to make hym chere / and in smyllyng named hym fader  
The doughter that was the yonger neuer lefte slepyng  
whan the sayd Olyuer sawe the / he considered whiche  
of them two he sholde slee fyrste / & bycause that the sone  
began for to speke to hym / he hadde soo grete pyte in his  
herte that he reculed abacke / & for all the woꝛde he wolde  
not haue smyten them / and then he sayd to hymselfe  
How many nature fayle so moche for to suffre the fader  
for to slee his chyld. For how may there be soo moche  
cruelte in a man for to cōsente to murdre. Alas þe saye &  
good helayne / what pyteous tydynge shall come vnto  
your ceteres / whan that ye shall knowe þe I haue slayne  
Oly.  
D.iii.



your chyldren / what shall ye saye. Certaynly your pytes  
ous herte may not endure it. And with that that ye lese  
your chyldren / ye shall lese your husbände also / for he da  
re not abyde in this realme for þe fere of your fader that  
shall put hym to dethe / for he is well worthy. And certes  
the doxþe bestes haue moze reason than I haue / vn  
to whome nature dothe teche for to kepe theyr fruyte to  
the dethe / and truely I ought for to resemble vnto them  
I oughte to put me in peryll of dethe for to saue my chyl  
dren / but thus it shall not go. And in saynge this he ap  
proched to the bedde / and yet lyfte vp the couerlet agay  
ne / and drewe hym by the arme and sayd. Unhappy chyl  
dren / ye ought well for to curse your fader / and his lyf  
whan he hathe engendred you and put you in this worl  
de from whiche ye must departe. Thus saynge full dolo  
roussly with the teeres descendynge a longe his face / and  
the swerde in his hande redy for to smyte / nature & rea  
son put afoze hym that it sholde be to grete domynage / &  
cruelte. And lyberalyte sayd to the contrary / that for to  
rende helthe to his felowe he coude not do to moche / þe  
whiche he blyued / and in putynge all feres behynde /  
withone stroke he smote of bothe theyr hedes / and then  
he put the basyn vnderneath / and receyued as meche blo  
de as he myght haue / and thenne he layde them in theyr  
bedde agayne / and the hedes in theyr places soo as they  
hadde ben alyue. He toke a maſteill with the whiche he  
couered it / and so bare it / in lockynge the doze after hym  
and toke the keye with hym / to the ende that nont shold  
entre to know what was done. ❖



**H**ow Olyuer in a basyn of syluer brought the bloode of his two chyldren to his felowe / and made hym to drynke it / and was all heled. Capitulo. lxviij.



**O**lyuer all alone holdynge the basyn in his handes came in to þe chambꝛ of his felowe and made to auoyde all them that were there / and then after he toke a lytell pot full of the blode that was yet all hote / and gaue it to his felowe Arthur for to drynke / that knewe nothynge what it was. And the hystoꝛye maketh mencyon that as sone as he had tasted of it all the vermyne of his heed fell of. And with this he keste oute all the vapours of his body / in suche wyse that he felte hymselfe of all poyntes  
Oly. P. iiii.

heled / saue the flesshe that was eten of his bysage was  
not so sone comen agayne. But Olyuer by thre or foure  
tymes wasshed it / and gaue hym the surplus for to drye  
ke so moche that he had agayne his syght and his helthe  
And when Arthur felte hymselfe heled / he kneled downe  
for the kysse the feete of his felowe. And Olyuer that  
was gladd of the guaryson and helth of his felowe sayd  
to hym. My frende gyue thankynges to god / and after  
to my chyldren the whiche I haue slayne for thy helthe /  
And to the ende that thou breleue it the better lo there y  
basyn that is yet all bloody of theyr blode. Arthur heroge  
and seynge this meruayll / hadde so grete abhomyne  
on / and was soo meuyd at his herte / that with payne it  
can be speccyfyed / and sayd to hym. **H**a ha Olyuer how  
may there rest so grete cruelte and tyrannye in a mānes  
herte as in thyn / that ha: he slayne thy two chyldren for  
me that am a straunge man / and nothyng of thy kynne  
Cruely I wolde be deed / so that it hadde not happened  
so to the. Olyuer sayd to hym my frende I was theyr fa  
der / and seynge that I haue put them to dethe / thou art  
te nothoge culpable / for it was not at thy request / wher  
fore holde the contente. But my ryght loyall felowe the  
re is another thyng / for it is nedefull that the departy  
ge of vs twayne be made. Wherfore I recomende my  
wyfe vnto the / and praye the that thou wylte comferte &  
helpe her. For I knowe well that she shall haue grete ne  
de of helpe when she shall knowe that the whiche is hap  
pened. All the golde of the worlde wolde not kepe me yf  
the kynge knewe it. Wherfore it is force for me for to de  
parte / and go in to suche a place where neuer tydynes  
shall be herde of me / and where as I maye serue god al  
p remenaunt of my lyfe for to purge my byces & synnes



Whyles that Olyuer spake to his felowe / the lady that  
 had the keepynge of the two chyldren had be at Helayne  
 and complayned her strongly of that / that she knewe  
 not in what estate the chyldren were / and excused her sa-  
 ynge that and there came ony euyl to them / that it was  
 by the sayd Olyuer.

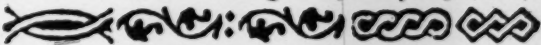




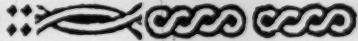
¶ Of the grete myracle that god dyde to Olyuer for  
 his loyalte / in reysyng his two chyldren to lyfe that he  
 hadde slayne. Capitulo. lxi.



Olyuer thought that it sholde be a thyng in  
 humayne for to se his two chyldren by hes  
 ded / wherfore he wente into the chambze  
 where as they were / for to haue put them  
 in a place where neuer tydynge sholde has-  
 ue ben herde of them. And this wolde he do afore his de-  
 partynge. Whā he had lyfte vp to the couerlet / he opened  
 the wyndowe that was shytte for to se them more playn-  
 ly / and then he came towarde his chyldren with y<sup>e</sup> teres  
 in his eyen / and in castynge his regarde on them / he ap-  
 perceyued that they hadde lyfe / and played bothe togy-  
 der. ¶ Whan Olyuer sawe this myracle / for pure Joye  
 he fell in a swoone to the erthe. And whā he was arysen  
 he embraced and kyssed them a. viij. tymes / and thēne he  
 sayd. ¶ Innumerable myghte of god that no man  
 can comprehend I rendze vnto the praysynge & than-  
 kes / of the goodnes that thou hast done to me poore syn-  
 ner / in shewynge thy grete pyte and mercye. He toke his  
 two chyldren in his armes and lapped them in a clothe


all bloody. And the fyrste that he encountred was his fel-  
lowe. Arthur to whome he sayd. Broder reioyse the / goo  
and se the kynge / and do so moche that he folowe me to  
the chyrche that I go to. In lyke wyse my wyfe and all  
them of the courte that ye may fynde. Then Olyuer pas-  
sed forth all alone thurgh the stretes / and he dydde soo  
moche that he came to the cathedrall chyrche of Poules  
where as he commaunded that all the belles sholde be  
rungen / to the ende that all manere of folke sholde come  
theder. He mounted on hys horse for to be herd of euery body  
And then he began for to saye whan he sawe that the kyn-  
ge was comen / and that the chyrche was full of folke.  
Ryght puyssaunt kynge of Englande thou hast maryed  
thy doughter to a man vnknown / for ye knowe that I  
neuer reherced to you of my lygnage / notwithstanding  
thynke that my condycyons be not so hye and soo vertus-  
ous as they ought to be / and that apperteyneth to my  
lygnage / the whiche is ryall / for I am sone of a kynge  
and of a quene / and at this presente tyme kynge of Cas-  
tyll. But neuer syth the decesse of my fader / and that the  
realme is fallen to me I haue not bene there But my wyll  
is now for to go theder / and make me to be crowned ky-  
ng and my wyfe quene. Wherefore I beseeche you noble  
kynge that ye wyll accompany me and youre doughter  
theder / for it is reason that I retorne better accompanied  
than I came forth. Notwithstanding that I had tas-  
ken leue of the ryghte puyssaunce kynge of Algarbe /  
my faythfull felowe that is there. I left hym a lettre by  
the whiche I prayed hym that yf he sawe the water of a  
glaske that I had left hym chaunge his coloure / that he  
sholde put hym in quest after me / for I sholde than ha-  
ue nede of helpe. He forgate it not / for he looked so moche

that he sawe it chaunge / and it was at the houre that I  
 was taken in Irlande. Whan he apperceyued it / he that  
 is a kynge redoubted / and regente of Castyll in abydyn  
 ge of my retozne / hathe habandonned landes and posses  
 syons / and all other thynges for my loue / and all alone  
 without ony company put hym on the waye / and made  
 auowde to god that he sholde neuer rest tyll that he hadde  
 herde trydynge of me. 

How Olyuer afoze the kynge of Englande and the  
 other barons of the realme / tolde his aduentures and  
 meruaylous fortunes. Capitulo. lxx.

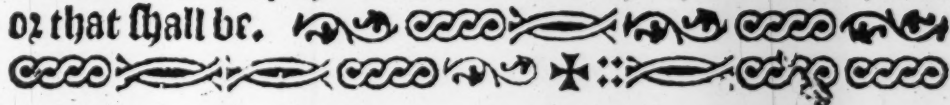
  

fter Olyuer began for to recoûte all the ad  
 uentures of Arthur / as well of them of the  
 forest / as of y other / and how that he hadde  
 foughten with the kynge of Irlande / & four  
 of his knyghtes that helde hym in pryson / &  
 dyde so moche by force of armes that he dyde baynquys  
 she hym / and slewe his men. And after sayd in this man  
 ner contynewynge by conclusyon. By the moyen of my  
 broder a loyall felowe Arthur I am deliuered from the  
 place where as I sholde neuer haue yssued out. And in  
 guerdon of all these thynges I broke one of his legges.  
 Now it is happened after all these thynges that he hath  
 had a meruaylous sykenes / not foure houres ago. And  
 so as I desired some thyng y myght hele hym. It hap  
 pened me to haue a byspon / and was tolde to me y who  
 that wolde gyue hym a drynke of the blode of two Inno  
 centes / sone and doughter medled togyder / that he shol  
 de haue helthe. So it is happened for to gete hy helth y

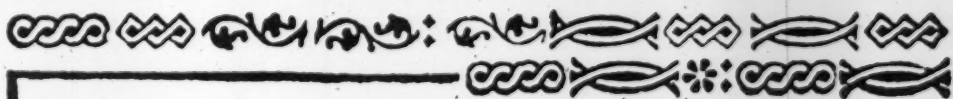
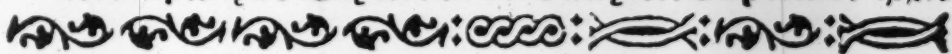


with this swerde I haue slayne my propre chyldre / and  
bpyheded them for to rendre to hym his helthe / the whiche  
he hathe / wherfore I gyue thankynge vnto our sa  
uour. And after that I sawe hym heled I thought for  
to haue departed from this realme. But yet I came in  
to her chambere for to se my chyldren that I had slayne /  
the whiche by the wyll of our lord that hathe extended  
his grace / and pyteous mercy on me poore synner / hath  
founde them alyue / and playnge the one with the other  
Wherfore faders and moders that hathe chyldren / thyn  
ke in what doloure I was in whā I put them to dethe  
And what Joye that I haue herde whan I se the reuy  
ued. Then he toke his two chyldre and afore all the peo  
ple shewed them alyue / lapped in the clothe that was all  
bebledde of thei blode. Wherfore all they that were the  
re present / were mouyd with inwardly pyte / that with  
wepynges and lamētacyons they made a grete bryfte  
The kynge wepte for grete Joye and pyte. The poore  
Helayne that sawe her chyldre so / myghte not supporte  
herselfe but fell in a swoone. And whan she was comen  
te herselfe / she came to her chyldren in shewynge to the  
moderly loue / & she coude not be fulfylled with kyllyn  
ge / and pyteous remuneracyon. Byefely it was a pyte  
ous thyng for to be in that chyrche / for some wepte for  
Joye and the other for pyte. And whan the sorowe was  
a lytell asswaged the kynge al wepyng came and enbra  
ced Olyuer saynge. Noble kynge blessyd be our lord  
whan he hathe gyuen me the pupylsaunce for to mary my  
doughter so nobly / as to a kynge that is extracte of so no  
ble a legnage. Ye recoūte vnto vs y moost meruaylous  
tale that euer was herde in ony countree. And ye maye  
well ymagyne that they that shall here it after vs shall

saye thus for for evermore the compaynye of you and of  
your broder as longe as the worlde shall endure ought to  
be recounted for the not semblable that fuer was herde  
or that shall be.



How Olyuer sente Arthur in to Castyll / for to no-  
tyf his comynge. And how the kynge of Englande  
accompanied Olyuer in to Castyll. Capitulo. lxxi.





He myracle was publyshed thurgh the realme of Englande. And after all these thynges they beganne for to make Joyous feestes in welcomynge the kyng of Castylle that was than knowen. And euery body sayd that the kyng was happy for to haue maryed his doughter soo. And sayd that it was meruayll that he had kepte hym so longe close. The kyng of Englande sente for the lordes and ladyes of his countree. And helde one of the grettest feestes that euer he had made. Olyuer prayd theym all that they wolde accompanye hym in to Castylle to be at his coronacyon. And they accorded hym all / and the kyng hymselfe sayd that he wolde go with hym / and Olyuer thanked hym. And after prayed the kyng of Algarbe his felowe that he wolde do soo moche as to goo in to Castylle for to denounce his comynge. Arthur sayd that he wolde do it gladly. He departed from Englande well accompanied / and dyde soo moche that they arriued in Castylle / where as he tolde the comynge of the kyng / & of his wyfe the kyng of Englandes doughter. Whan ytydynges were denounced that he was comē / and that Olyuer came after / euery body thanked god / and apparayled them for to receyue hym in the moost honourablest wyse that they myghte. They of the realme assembled them / and by counsayll ordeyned for to make feest: from the fyrste towne of the realme where as he sholde entre / vnto the laste that he sholde passe by. And all at y expence of the realme. Whan Olyuer thought that his felowe myght be well in Castyll he made that the kyng was contente to departe. And departed from London the fayrest / and the moost noble companye / and the best in poynt that euer was sene vpon a daye. Helayne was



accompanied of ladyes and damoyelles in suche wyse  
that it was gret pleasure for to beholde theym of theyr  
Journys I can not deuise to you / but they dyde soo  
moche that they arriued in Spayne / where as they were  
re feested of all the grete lordes that they passed by. And  
whan they approached nere Castyll. Arthur and all the  
grete lordes came agaynst them. And welcomed theym  
ryght graciously / and Joyously in thankynge god of  
theyr comynge. Then they made reuerence to theyr lord  
and to theyr newe quene also. The whiche semed them  
the fayrest lady that euer they had sene. Also they salued  
the kynge of Englande in offryng them to his seruyce /  
And whan they were entred in to the fyrst towne of the  
realme / the stretes were hanged / and pagentes vpon scaf  
folds / and there was soo many other playes that they  
wyst not yf whiche they myght beholde. The ladyes were  
in the wyndowes so richely clothed that it was mer  
uayll. And whan it came that they entred in to the pryn  
ces place / all that they had sene afore was nothyng to  
that yf whiche they sawe there. They were so wel seruyd  
at souper that it was miruayle. And synabyle in all the  
townes that they passed by they founde newe thynges  
and alwaye better and better. From the begynnynge of  
the realme all the companye were at the good Olyuers  
expences. In that estate they came vnto the cyte of Mau  
dolytys / where as they founde the olde quene of Castyll  
Olyuers stepmoder / and Arthurs owne moder / the whi  
che at the request of her sone Arthur / was comē oute of  
the realme and countree of Algarbe for to saye vnto the  
fayre Belayne that was newe quene / that she was wel  
come / and to Olyuer semblably. Also in that same Cyte  
was the moost ryalte as in the pryncypall cyte. And

whan it came that they were descended at the palays / y  
 quene Arthurs moder came agaynst them strongly ac  
 companied with ladyes and damoyelles / & welcomed  
 the newe quene / & also y kynge of Englande her fader.  
 And on y morowe Olyuer was crowned / & he layne also  
 And at the dynner the kynge of Englande / the kynge of  
 Castyle / the kynge of Algarbe / & the two other quenes  
 were set at one table / & all. v. were crowned.

Here it deupseth how the kynge and y other lordes  
 and ladyes dyde departe. And how y whyte knyght  
 appered to Olyuer / and oppressed hym for to holde his  
 promesse / whiche was for to gyue hym y halfe of his  
 wyynyng bycause of the toneyment. Ca. lxxij.



**A**fter these thynges and that the kynge of Eng-  
lande hadde ben there by the space of two  
monethes / he demaunded Olyuer yf that  
he wolde not retozne in to Englande / and he  
answered hym naye. And sayd that he was  
more at his ease in his realme that had be so longe with-  
out a kynge / than for to retozne in to Englande. Then  
the kynge concluded to departe / and Olyuer conueyed  
hym out of his realme. And whan it came that they shol-  
de take leue the kynge of Englande sayd to hym. My so-  
ne and my frende Olyuer I recomaunde vnto you my  
doughter your wyfe / and I pray you yf that I haue nes-  
de that ye wyll forgete not me. And Olyuer sayd to hy  
naye / and that as often and as many tymes as he shol-  
de haue to do with hym that he sholde fynde hym redy.  
And so they toke leue / and the kynge of Englande wen-  
te towarde Englande / & the kynge of Castyle retozned /  
in to his countree / where as he founde his broder Arthur  
kynge of Algarbe / yf whiche wolde retozne in to his cou-  
ntree / and ledde agayne his moder that tooke leue of the  
kynge without makynge any mencyn of any thyng yf  
had happened afoze. And whan he founde hymselfe alo-  
ne / and was deliuered of all straunge men / he bylyted  
his realme / and made his ordynaunces soo fayre and so  
good that euery body was contente. He with helde dy-  
uers lordes of the realme of Castyle of his court / with  
some of Englande that were abyden with hym. And as  
he had ben there a whyle he was knowe of all the noble  
men / that loued hym as theyr lyfe. They were all reioys-  
sed of the two fayre chyldren that they had / the whiche  
dyde increase in auge / in condycyons / and in beaute that  
it was meruayll. And whan it came to the knowlege of



them of the countree of the fayre myracle that had hap-  
pened/all the worlde was abaſhed how he had/had the  
courage for to ſlee them/for they knewe wel as to the re-  
garde of the myracle that the purſſaunce of god is ſo gre-  
te that none can comprehend it. Thus as ye here the  
kyng of Caſtyle lyued in Joye with his fayre and good  
ſpoule/reſours of all his ſykenellies and aduētures/and  
aledgyng of all his dolours. Euery body loued and dre-  
ded hym ſo moche that neuer kyng of Caſtyle was ſoo  
obeyed of his ſubgettes. It happened on a ſomer dave  
aboute ſoure a clocke that the dave was fayre and clere/  
and as the kyng of Caſtyle ſlepte with his wyfe/a thif-  
ge came and knocked at the chambze doze ſoo meruayls-  
lous ſtrokes that it hadde almoost broken the doze. The  
kyng awaked and demaunded what it was. That ſame  
thyng answered open the doze & thou ſhalte ſe/or elles  
I ſhall breke it. Whan the kyng herde hym ſpeke ſoo he  
put on his ſherte/and toke his naked ſwerde in his han-  
de and came and opened the doze. It was not ſoo ſoone  
open but that he knewe that it was his knyght/that at  
his nede had alwaye ſocoured and ſcrupd hym. And yet  
he was clothed in the whyte gowne that he hadde at the  
houre that he departed fro hym. Whan the kyng ſawe  
hym he toke hym in his armes and ſayd. My frende ye  
be welcome. And he answered/welcome or yll coms/yt  
am I comen/and not for to tell you any thyng that is  
pleaſaūt. The kyng ſayd that he coude ſaye nothyng  
that ſholde dyſpleaſe hym/for he had good remēbraun-  
ce of the promiſſe that he had made to hym/and was re-  
dy for to holde it.



¶ Here it maketh mencpon of the sayd whyte knyght  
 And of the grete dolour that Olyuer and his wyfe de  
 meaned for theyr chylzen / of whiche the whyte kny  
 ghte toke the sone for his parte / and of other mystery  
 es of the quene. Capitulo.

lxiii.



Oly.

¶ Her entred bothe in to þe chambie where as  
 they founde Helayne a brdde / that was all a  
 bafshed whā she sawe the knyght clothed in  
 whyte entred in to the chambie. ¶ The kynge  
 badde her atyle / soo as she dydde / and whan

Q.ij.

He was redy / the knyght prayed the kynge that he wolde  
de kepe his promesse / and that he wolde kepe his fayth /  
The kynge Olyuer hadde then all the thynges redy and  
apparaylled. For it was of longe tyme purueyed in aby  
dynge the whyte knyght / and had departed all these thy  
nges in wayne / and began for to saye vnto the knyghte  
in this maner. My frende I shall begynne at the Jewel  
les of my wyfe without the clothyng that hath ben es  
tymed a myloun of golde / so there the keye take the whis  
che that ye wyll / for all his departed in halfe / & my treas  
soure in lyke wyse ye shall chese the whiche halfe that ye  
wyll. After the mouable goodes of my hous that I am  
serued with / I thynke that ye haue but lytell to do with  
them / saue the bestell. And that vpon his fayth he hadde  
departed in two all that he hadde wonne and moore to /  
for the moost parte of his treasour proceded of the real  
me of Castylle / and that and he had euer ony thyng of  
that of Englande / he sholde be lord of the Just halfe as  
he hadde promysed hym. The knyght sayd that he was  
not contente and sayd to hym. A kynge ye lere to me of  
that whiche ye saye / for ye do not departe it so to me as  
ye haue promysed. Haue ye not wone wyfe and chyldren  
The kynge sayd ye. Then sayd the knyghte I oughte to  
haue parte. Whan the kynge vnderstode hym he set  
hym on his knes / & prayed hym with Joyned handes  
that he wolde leue hym his chyldren / and that he wolde  
grue hym the halfe of his realme and with that y resy  
due of his treasoure. In lyke wyse the poore Helyayne in  
grette humylite with the teres in her eyen prayed hym y  
he wolde haue pyte on her / and on her burde / and that  
he were contente for to take that the whiche her husban  
de dyde offre hym / by suche moye y the chyldren sholde

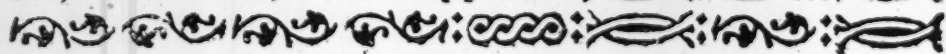


abyde to them. The knyght sayd to hym. Dame I wyll  
do nothyng for you nor for none other. And yf that ye  
wyll not do it / it is well in my power for to make you re  
compence it full derely. Then the kynge commaunded  
the moder for to fetch her chyldre / the which she dyde  
and founde them a bedde and made them to aryse / and  
clothed them / and then broughte them. Whan the kyn  
ge sawe them he demaunded the knyght yf that he wol  
de be contente for his realme & his treasoure for to ren  
dre to hym his chyldren / yf prayre myght haue any plas  
ce. The knyght sayd naye. Now sayd þe kynge syth that  
it gothe thus / chose which that ye loue best. The knyght  
sayd that he wolde haue the sone / because that he knewe  
that he loued hym best. The kynge all wepyge took his  
sone by the hande and gaue hym to the knyght saynge /  
My sone and my chyldre I recommaunde the in to the  
garde of our lord / the pleasure of thy yongthe hathe lvs  
tell endured me. Who that than had sene the poore Hys  
layne take leue of her chyldre / he sholde haue had a harde  
herte yf that he had not wepte / and Helayne wepte ha  
boundauntly saynge. Chyldre ryall wherfore haue I boz  
ne the whan that I must be consentyng of thy prydycc  
on O ryght noble realmes of Englande and of Castylle  
to daye ye shall lese your kynge and lord. After this the  
knyght wolde haue halfe of the fayre Helayne / the which  
thyng Olyuer coude not vnderstande how it myght be  
but yf that he sholde see her / wherfore he comytted the  
dede to the knyght. And then the knyght answered vns  
to hym that he was noo murderer of ladyes / and alsoo þ  
it was no reason that he sholde paye hym with his hands  
de / for he knewe well that he must paye hym hymselfe þ  
the which he had promysed hym / and then sayd / yf that

Oly.

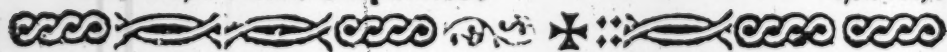
R. W.

thou hye the not it shall mysshynke vs bothe. Whan Oly  
uer sawe that he myght haue none other thyng / he ca  
me towarde his wyfe & set hym on his kners in praynge  
her that she wolde pardon hym her dethe. The good he  
layne sayd that she wolde pardon hym with good herte  
and then she embrased hym in saynge. Ryght noble kyn  
ge the dyfference is grete of the Joyous acquayntaunce  
that we had fyrste togyder / at the tynie that ye were cal  
led Olyuer. Ha the ryghte dolourous departyng that to  
daye shall be made of vs two. After that she hadde sayd  
these wordes / she made her orysons to god and to the vir  
gyn Mary / in cryenge mercy to god for all her synnes / &  
that he wolde put her soule in the gloire of paradyse / &  
that yf her lord had done any synne for to see her / that  
he wolde pardon hym. And whan she had ended her pra  
yers and sayd her orysons / she came towarde her lord  
and husbnde / and kyssed hym with the teres descendyn  
ge from her eyn / and sayd that she was redy for to aby  
de the dethe. Wherfore she toke leue of hym / and of her  
two chyldren / and sette her vpon her knees with her ha  
des ioyned towarde heuen / in recommaundyng her vn  
to god. As she that abode but the stroke of dethe. Whan  
the kynge sawe her in that estate as a man halfe oute of  
his wytte approached and in lyftynge by his swerde wol  
de haue clouen her in tmo pceces.



How the knyght had pyte on Olyuer hauynge  
knowlege of his loyalte / and quytte hym all. And  
then he made hym to be knowen hym / and tolde hy  
what he was. Capitulo.

lxiii.






Wan þ knyght sawe this pyteous aduentu-  
re he lete not þ swerde auale a dowe / for  
he withelde his arme & sayd / abyde kynge  
that I maye speke to you / & to you quene /  
here me speke. Then he began for to say &  
demaunde the kynge / yf that he had no remembraunce  
of a knyght that was named syr Johan Talbot the whi-  
che was deed in his company in the sentence of cursynge.  
And yf that he remembred hym not how that he pas-  
yed the dette to the purgeys / and made hym to be bury-  
ed. The kynge answered ye. And I tell the sayd the kny-  
ghte that I am that same knyghte / and that same that  
serued the at the tozneyment of Englande / and bycause  
that thou hast done me pleasure / I rendre to the all thy  
moneye / and all hooly thy synaunce that thou haste gy-  
uen me. And in lyke wyse I rendre to the thy sone / and  
quyte the in lyke wyse the halfe of thy wyfe / that whiche  
I haue done hath ben for to assaye the and thy fraunchy-  
se. To the surplus I shall tell the wherfore at the fyrste  
daye of the tozneyment I clothed þ in blacke / that was  
sygnifyaunce of þ obscurete that I was in. The secōde  
daye that was in rede / sygnifyed my paynes in purgas-  
toye. The last daye in whyte / sygnifyed my saluacion /  
for so as þ whyte is byrgyn / for it was neuer soyllid by  
stepnyng / wherby it is pure and clene. In lyke wyse I  
am so at this presente tyme / for by the and by the cause /  
I am aledged of all my doloure / and now I go in to the  
holy glozve of paradys / to se þ present of my creatoure  
that is the reioysyng of the saued / wherfore I take leue  
of the / for there as I go thou mayst not come yet / but be  
thou sure that I shall praye for the. Then he vanys-  
hed awaye / and in theyr presence he mounted in to heuen

Oly.

Q. liij.



glozously in castynge the beames of his clerenes vpon  
the wyndowe that the kynge and the quene lened vpon  
The whiche in a lytell while was oute of theyr syghte.  
Then they sette them vpon theyr knees in rendyng  
graces to theyr creatour / and after that they had made  
theyr prayson in thakynge god / they began for to make  
the one to the other ryght pyteous acquaintaunce / soo  
moche and by suche maner as yf the quene had ben arys  
sen from dethe at that same houre. The kynge of Castyll  
that neuer had receyued one goodnes / but that he had  
de receyued ten euyles agaynst it / lyued in Joye w<sup>th</sup> his  
ryght welbeloued wyfe / and had neuer dyspleasure af  
ter that / saue all Joyes vnto the houre of his dethe. Her  
layne was strongly seke for the fere that she had hadde  
darynge the whiche maladye Arthur came in to Castyll  
for to se Olyuer / to whome Olyuer made ryghte grete  
chere / and sone after that Helayne gate vp / the whiche  
was cause of moze gretter Joye / and all Joye & myrthe  
was in the realme of Castyll / there was no ipckynge of  
nothyng saue to make good chere. The sone and y<sup>e</sup> dou  
ghter of the kynge were alreedy grete / in so moche that y<sup>e</sup>  
doughter was redy for to be maryed. Wherfore the kyn  
ge sayd vpo a daye to the kynge of Algarbe / my broder  
I haue but one felowe in all the worlde / and that is you  
For ye may wel auaunte you that ye be parsonere of the  
goodes that god hathe gyuen me. And therfore as vnto  
my broder I wyll tell vnto you myr aduysle. fynably ye  
be to mary & as yet hathe no wyfe / wherfore I am gre  
tely ameruaylled that ye haue abyde soo longe. I haue  
two chyldren a sone and a doughter / and by my fayth yf  
that I thoughte that ye were contente for to mary you /  
I wolde gyue you my doughter in maryage / and therfo

re loke and my Doughter dothe please you / & yf that ye  
 thynke that she is for you I gyue her to you. Or yf that  
 it semeth you better elles where take it. Ye maye saye he  
 re pryncely your wyll / for y loue that I haue to you mas  
 kech me for to saye thus to you. 

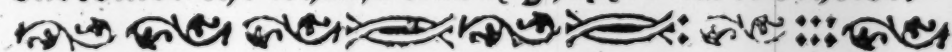
**H**ow Olyuer of Castylle gaue his doughter in mar  
 ryage to his felowe Arthur of Algarbe / and of the de  
 the of Olyuer and of Helayne his wyfe. Ca. lxxv.



**A**nd whan that Arthur Kyng of Algarbe  
herde the kyng of Castyle speke so humbly  
he thanked hym in saynge y he dyde to hym  
more honoure than apperteyned to hy / and  
syth that it was his pleasure for to gyue hy  
his daughter / that he sholde be ryght yngracious for to  
refuse her. Whan the kyng of Castyle vnderstode that  
his felowe hadde grete wyll for to attayne to this marrya  
ge / he sente incontynent after all the noble me of his coun  
tree. And whan they were all assembled he made y spou  
saylles of Arthur and his daughter so grete and so plen  
teous of all goodes / that it coude be noo more. And this  
feest endured a longe tyme. In the whiche whyle tydyn  
ges came in to Castyle that the kyng of Chypres was  
assyege of the infydeles / and requyred the kyng of cas  
tyle of helpe and socoure / and also all the other crysten  
prynces. Whan this tydynge came to the knowlege of  
the yonge prynce the kynges sone / he made a requeste to  
his fader that he wolde gyue hy leue and ayde for to goo  
to the whiche he accorded / and gaue hym a grete armye  
but he retozned neuer after agayne / as treateth more at  
longe the cronycles of Castyle. For after that he hadde  
delyuered the realme of Chypres of the p encynyes / he  
wente in to Turky where as he conquered dyuers real  
mes that he made for to be Crystenned. And yf that he  
had not deyed yonge / he had ben a man for to haue cons  
quered the moost parte of the worlde. The kyng of Al  
garbe ledde his wyfe in to his countree. And thre yere  
after his departynge / a ryght greuous maladye toke y  
Kyng of Castyle by the wyll of oure lorde that of these  
thynges dysposeth at his pleasure / and was so syke that  
he layne his wyfe / as she that abode not but his dethe




sente for the kynge of Algarbe / the whiche was not so so  
 ne arryued / but that the kynge of Castyll passed oute of  
 this worlde in grete wepynges and lamentacyons of all  
 his subgettes and frendes / and generally of his mē and  
 all them that knewe hym. And whan the tydynge was  
 pronouced to clayne / maulgre all them that kente her  
 she came to se her lord that was deed / & whan she was  
 entred in to the chambze and that she approched the bo-  
 dy / she criered on hys. A ryght pynssaunt kynge how I  
 se thy fayre face pale / by the dethe anguylshous / and thy  
 fuyrour armes affebled / and in saynge this she lete her  
 selfe fall vpon the body / and she arose neuer after / for of  
 doloure her herte dyde breke and deyed. Wherby the do-  
 loure was redoubled. ¶ The pooze kynge of Algarbe de-  
 meaned so grete dole that it was pyte for to se. And ma-  
 de innumerable lamētacyons so moche that it sholde be  
 to longe to recounte it. In lyke wyse the quene of Algar-  
 be came for to see her fader & her moder that were deed /  
 & she made so grete dole that with grete payn she myght  
 be comforted. Bothe the deed bodys were buryed in  
 one tombe / the whiche was ryght pytcous to beholde.

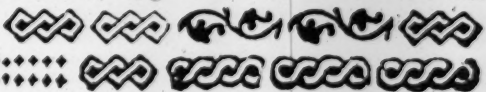


¶ How Olyuers sone deyed in turky / & how Arthur  
 was kynge of Englande and of Castyll. Ca. lxxvii.




 One after that the grete dole had be in Cas-  
 tylle / Olyuers sone that atte y<sup>e</sup> tyme was  
 theyr kyge was enprysouned by some lara-  
 syns in y<sup>e</sup> marches of Turky / but that was  
 not but that afore his prysounge he had be


crowned of thre realmes that he had conquered / and by  
cause that there was no moo apperteynyng heires in  
castyll than y<sup>e</sup> quene of Algarbe Arthurs wyfe / they ma  
de her quene / and crowned her husbande kynge of the  
countree / in doyng to hym fayth and homage. ¶ Aly  
tell whyle after came tydynge to the kynge of Castylle  
and of Algarbe / that the kynge of Englande grandfa  
der of his wyfe was decessed. And that the Duke of Glo  
cestre that was cousyn germaine to the kynge of Eng  
lande / had made hym to be crowned kynge of the real  
me. Wherfore he sente in to Englande for to knowe and  
it were by the consente of the noble men of the countree  
And for to knowe yf that he sholde not be receyued for  
kynge as reason wolde. It was answered to hym naye /  
Wherfore he assembled a grete cōpany of folke / and w<sup>th</sup>  
grete puyssaunce came and descended in Englande / and  
dyde so moche by force of armes / after dyuers grete bas  
taylles / that he that sayd hym kynge was taken and put  
in pryson / where as he neuer yssued oute after. After he  
made hym to be crowned kynge as reason wolde / and y<sup>e</sup>  
Englysshemen receyued hym for theyr lord / and soo he  
was kynge of Englande / of Castylle / and of Algarbe / &  
also he was kynge of one of y<sup>e</sup> realmes of Irlande. The  
surplus of his dayes he lyued in grete prosperyte and en  
creasynge of all goodes. He had thre chyldre of his wyfe  
two sones and one doughter / that after his decesse they  
helde his lordshyppes. The eldest was kynge of Englan  
de and of Irlande / and the other kynge of Castylle / and  
his doughter was maryed to the kynge of Portyngale /  
and he had with her the realme of Algarbe / that yet ap  
perteyneth to hym. The two sones gouerned well & wy  
sely theyr realmes. And were redoubted / and full dere


holden of theyr subgettes and neyghbours. After / the  
 dethe of the Kyng thei fader / and of the quene thei  
 moder. The surplus of theyr dayes they lyued holpy in  
 seruyng god and the glorious byrgyn Marye. Then  
 they passed out of this worlde ryght gloriously / god for  
 his holy grace haue mercy on theyr soules. And gyde go  
 de lyfe and longe / and encreasynge of all goodnes vnto  
 all them that this hystoꝛye shall rede oꝛ here redde / and  
 that wyrteth it oꝛ maketh it to be wyrtten / and also to all  
 them that shall se it. Amē. 

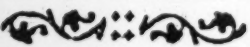
**E**The epylogacyon of the booke. The last Ca.

**A**lystotle the phylosophye sayth that the thynges  
 yf be separed be vnderstonen & knowē  
 moze dystynctely / for yf whiche cause the tas  
 ble hath ben made and put in the begynnynge  
 of this presente boke for to vnderstāde it  
 yf better. And bycause that it sholde seme to dyuers yf  
 some passyues of thystoꝛye by symplytude of impossylyte  
 ought not to be byleued for a trouthe / for the meruayll yf  
 is sayd. To the declaracyon of the passages of thystoꝛye  
 by maner of epylogacyon this laste chapytre is compyz  
 sed. And to the regarde of Olyuer and Arthur that we  
 re so lyke / the dyffyculte is not to grete / for whan yf two  
 chyldren be of one aerge / and of one felte complexyon ha  
 uynge some symplytude of bysage / & coysage / facelly one  
 may be taken for another / namey bycause they be nou  
 rysshed togyder / spekyng all one langage / clothed in se  
 blable clothes / instructe vnder one mayster / holdynge



and keepynge all one maner of doyng and countenaunce/all this togyder/and dyuers other thynges make the them be sayd semblable. 


**T**o the regarde of the queene that was espyled of the loue of Olyuer/it was but fragylte naturall of women that foloweth sensuallite agaynst honoure. 


**T**ouchyng the water of the glasse that ought to trouble at Olyuers daunger/by this ye must not vnderstande that it was water elementall in his nature / but by cause that Olyuer was all vertuous / & that his vnderstandynge was all gyuen to good/and to loue god/perseuerynge in good and vertuous operacyōs/and slepyng all vyces and synnes/god permysed that Arthur had knowlege of the aduersytees happened to Olyuer his fellowe by the chaungynge of the water of the sayd glasse / by the prayer of his fellowe Olyuer made vnto god / euē so as he had wyten in the lettre / and all this to the ende that of them were memozye afterwarde / for to knowe the puyssaunce of god / and the meruayles that on them he wolde shewe / as on his frendes & good crysten men / and for to gyue example vnto the other. 

**A**lmoche as it toucheth of the fortunes happened vnto Olyuer and Arthur / as well on the see as on the lāde it is but a thyng naturall/and of semblable happeneth often by the dysposycyon of the meder / but that whan they were preserued from deth / that was the wyll of god / and thynges myraculous that were shewed on them.

**T**o the regarde of the whyte knyght that appered so to Olyuer / and gaue hym comfōrte and ayde in his nedes / god had sente hym in rewardyng hym in this worlde of the grete goodnesse and werkes of myserycorde that he hadde accomplyshed in procurynge the absolucyon

of that same knyght that was holden for accused.

**W**here as it toucheth that Olyuer was taken by one of the kynges of Irlande / and retayned prysoner / and after delyuered out of prysen by Arthur / god caused all this / to the ende that the kyng of Irlande that vniuste ly and without cause was enemye of his heret and graytour / for alreedy by iust warre he had made to hym homage / and to the kyng of Englande / the whiche put hym in his realme agayne / abode not unpunysshed in this same worlde of his euyl and traytourous wyll / to the ende that all traytours take ensample by hym / and kepe them from falsynge of theyr othe. 

**T**o the regarde that Arthur coude not be helde but yf he dranke of the blode of two Innocentes / one a doughter / god had done it and gyue it to vnderstande by reuelacyon for to proue yf loyalte and true loue of these two felowes / as we rede of Abraham that was contente for to make sacrefyce of his sone Ysaac vnto god / in lyke wyse Olyuer was soner cōtente to hele his felowe by sleynge of his chyldren / than for to se hym deye / and it maye be that his chyldren were deed / and after reuyued / or elles that god couered the murdye and semed to Olyuer that they were deed / soo as it semed to the Jewes that Moyses had hornes / yet had he none. 

**A**nd as moche as it toucheth that Olyuer was contente for to see his wyfe the quene for to kepe his promesse vnto the whyte knyght Syr Johan Talbot / to whome he hadde promysed the halfe of his wyynyng at the toynement / he was so grounde and resoluēd in loyalte yf of his promyse he coude not nor durst not excuse hym. As we haue of kyng Herode yf loued of saynt Johā baptyst / but yet he wolde kepe his promyse to his doughter

and make hym to be byheded / than to fayle and breke y  
 fayth of his othe. ¶ And bycause that to god is nothyn  
 ge impossyble / he hath done for oure doctryne dyuers  
 myracles that ben worthy of memozye perpetuall / as y  
 bystozye specyfeth here afoze / made to y praylynge of  
 god and of his glorzyous moder / and to the honour of the  
 noble mē / and to the felycyte of all loyall & true louers.  
 to the example of pacyentes / to the hope of the cheual  
 rous / and to the ferrylyte and occupacyon of the tyme  
 salutarie. Amen.

¶ Here endeth y bystozye of Olyuer of Castylle / and  
 of the fayre Helayne doughter vnto the kynge of En  
 glande. Imprinted at London in flete strete at the  
 sygne of the sonne by Wynkyn de Worde. The yere  
 of oure lorde. M. CCCC. and. xviij.





